

*box  
przmt*

LIBRARY  
Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.

BR 1720 .G7 U6 1851  
Ullmann, Carl, 1796-1865.  
Gregory of Nazianzum









# GREGORY OF NAZIANZUM.

---

‘Ο ΘΕΟΛΟΓΟΣ.

‘THE DIVINE.’

---

A CONTRIBUTION TO THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY  
OF THE FOURTH CENTURY.

BY

DR. CARL ULLMANN,

PROFESSOR EXTRAORDINARY OF THEOLOGY AT HEIDELBERG.

TRANSLATED BY

G. V. COX, M.A.

ESQUIRE-BEDEL IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD.

Πρᾶξις ἐπίβασις θεωρίας.

*Greg. Naz.*

LONDON:

JOHN W. PARKER, WEST STRAND.

M DCCCLL

LONDON :

SAVILL AND EDWARDS, PRINTERS,

CHANDOS STREET.

## NOTICE BY THE TRANSLATOR.

---

THE biography of Gregory Nazianzen here presented is only a half of Dr. Ullmann's volume. It forms, however, a perfect whole in itself; and as its interest is quite of a different kind, and more attractive to the general reader, the dogmatic part (or the statement and examination of Gregory's theological opinions), though nearly finished by the Translator, is for the present withheld.

As the Translator is no theologian, he presumes not to offer any Preface of his own. The fly-leaf will, he thinks, be better filled with the following stanzas, in which Bishop Ken, that saint of the Church of England, draws a parallel between himself and the Bishop of Constantinople, Gregory of Nazianzum.

Bless'd Gregory, whose patriarchal height  
Shed on the Eastern sphere celestial light,  
To Nazianzum flew, dethron'd by rage,  
And spent in songs divine his drooping age.  
I, if the least may with the greatest dare  
In *grief*, not gifts or graces, to compare,  
Forc'd from my flock by uncanonic heat,  
In singing hymns thus solace my retreat.



Bless'd Gregory, with pain and sickness griev'd,  
His spirit oft with songs devout reliev'd ;  
And while on hymns his meditation dwelt,  
Devotion sweeten'd ev'ry pang he felt.  
Pain haunting me, I court the sacred muse,  
Verse is the only laudanum I use.  
Eas'd of my sacred load, I live content ;  
In hymn, not in dispute, my passion vent.

Bless'd Gregory, to sacred verse consigned  
The last efforts of his immortal mind,  
Those poems loftiest prospects have disclos'd,  
On brink of bright eternity compos'd.  
I the small dol'rous remnant of my days  
Devote to hymn my great Redeemer's praise.  
And nearer as I draw t'ward heavenly rest,  
The more I love th' employment of the blest.

## DR. ULLMANN'S PREFACE.

---

THE words of Gregory, 'Practice is the way to knowledge,' have been taken for my motto, not only because I am convinced with Gregory, and the author of the excellent letter to Diognetus,<sup>1</sup> 'that there is no true life without knowledge, and no sure knowledge without true life;' but also because they show at once the principal point of view from which I may be supposed to have contemplated the following biography. Religion and theology rest entirely on the union and mutual co-operation of correct knowledge and a life of truth. It is only the clearly-perceived truth which can operate powerfully upon our mind and will; and it is only in proportion as we apply our knowledge to our lives, and allow the truths of salvation to work in earnest to our real sanctification, that a firm, lively, deep-rooted knowledge of those truths can be attained, a knowledge that is ever developing itself in greater purity and completeness. This holds good of every kind of knowledge whose subject is not external nature, but, either wholly or in part, our own internal being. Nay, it is one and the same way that leads to a solid acquaint-

---

<sup>1</sup> The *Epistola ad Diognetum*, usually attributed to Justin, but hardly belonging to him, was composed by a truly christian man of the first centuries; towards the end it is written:—οὐδε γὰρ ζωὴ ἄνευ γνώσεως, οὐδε γνῶσις ἀσφαλὴς ἄνευ ζωῆς ἀληθοῦς.

ance with *natural* objects, and to a knowledge of things *invisible*—the way of experience. As, in the former case, a confident, elevated, intellectual notion of the subject is only possible on the condition of a sure perception by means of the senses, so also in the latter, *that* only can be brought home to the mind in a clear and living consciousness, which lives in us, and which has become to us an inward fact and a matter of experience. And thus the whole of Christianity is, and will continue, to us a mere history, differing in no essential features from any other history, unless it passes into our soul and life, and is converted, as it were, into the juice and blood of our nature.

Therefore also in theology, the science of divine things, those have always been the greatest masters, and have produced the happiest results, whose clear knowledge rested upon a strong living conviction, and of whom that is true which was said by Eusebius of Origen: ‘As his word, so also was his life; and as his life, so was his word.’ In this respect the best of the old Fathers (amidst many imperfections, which we will not deny) were pre-eminently great theologians. Their knowledge was practical; it set out from life, and it was directed back to life. They took their stand, with all their thoughts, and actions, and efforts, on Christianity; on a Christianity, certainly, not everywhere clearly and accurately conceived. On this account their christian knowledge is by no means to be a standard for ours. As little were they free from manifold human infirmities and deficiencies; and therefore, also, we are far from considering them as patterns of a perfectly holy life. They may, however, be animating exemplars to us in this respect,—that they devoted



themselves, with all the powers of their mind, and with all the energy of their will, to that which they acknowledged as the highest and the holiest. They dedicated their lives to Christianity, they sacrificed their enjoyments to it, they renounced for it, not only lawful conveniences, but often also the simplest necessities. If, then, we are bound to esteem every one who is ready to sacrifice the pleasures, the enjoyments, and the good things of life to his sincere convictions, and if, in this relation, we cheerfully honour every noble patriot, every hero of ancient and modern times,—shall we exclude from this regard those men who sacrificed so much for the same invisible goods, which we also must consider most valuable? Shall we exclude them, only because they conceived those goods were to be partaken of in a different form and in another manner than we do? It is not difficult to understand, that many of the privations and sacrifices which those men imposed upon themselves were not required by the Gospel; it costs no trouble to point out the incorrectness of the theoretic principles on which their conduct in this respect was regulated; and but little skill is necessary to make them appear ridiculous and foolish. But it is assuredly no small thing, with the light of a clearer knowledge, to walk in the same devoted spirit which animated them.

Many blemishes, as well in theory as in practice, may lie clear and open in an Origen, a Chrysostom, a Theodoret, an Augustine, (even after his conversion,) nor will they be either concealed or glossed over by an honest historian. But as little inclined will he be, as an unprejudiced judge, to overlook, or to throw into the shade, that which is truly noble and great in their characters. To explore such qualities, and make them known, is

always more agreeable and more profitable.<sup>1</sup> He will rather extend the same justice to these distinguished men which he justly does not deny to a Julian. Still it will appear that these Fathers of the Church were no more infallible in their knowledge and lives than is the life and knowledge of the most distinguished theologian, philosopher, and historian of our own day; yet, notwithstanding this, that they were men who, in relation to their time, deserve our respect and regard quite as much as any honest, zealous, strong-minded, pious individual of any other century.

In this spirit of candour and impartiality, I have endeavoured to exhibit the life and the theological opinions of one of the most remarkable and influential Fathers of the fourth century, *Gregory Nazianzen*. It has been my main object in this work to portray him *as he was*, to give a living and true copy of his character, and to compose his intellectual portrait from the noble and beautiful, as well as the less attractive, features of his nature. The essential requisites for such a representation are truth and life. That I have honestly striven to give truth to the portrait, I dare to attest of myself. I have desired to conceal nothing, and to give an unfair prominence to nothing, neither to embellish nor to undervalue, to subserve no preconceived philosophic or dogmatic system,<sup>2</sup> to promote no party object.

---

<sup>1</sup> So also, Joh. Aug. Ernesti, in reference to Origen and other Fathers, points out, as the more generous practice: 'in viris egregiis bona potius quærere et laudare, quam mala indagare et reprehendere.'

<sup>2</sup> For this very reason I have been very sparing of criticism in the exhibition of Gregory's opinions on doctrinal points. I have thought it my duty to give *his* convictions, not my own; though I have not scrupled to allow my own views to appear on many passages, yet without mixing them up with the historical account.

I have wished, not to MAKE UP a history, but, first of all, to search out, singly and alone, pure historical truth, and to present it faithfully as I found it. Yet in doing this it is plain of itself, that the theologian, even if, as an historian, he does not see things through the glasses of a predetermined system, views nevertheless the historical data from a theological standing-point, and apprehends them with a religious sense. But whether or not there be *life* in my representation, is a point on which I must wait for a just decision from others ; from those, that is, who take into the consideration, that this is, in part, a matter of natural talent, which no man can give to himself, and the want of which the best intentions cannot compensate ; and in part a matter of tact and historical art, which can be attained only by long-continued practice. It has been my chief aim to write a readable, useful book, complete, as far as possible, in information respecting the individual who is the subject of it ; and to that extent, I believe, my labour will also be useful to the historical inquirer, and acceptable to any one who, with greater master-skill, may work up the materials here supplied. In pursuing the object here expressed I could not avoid the discussion of many other less interesting points, because I wished to give the biography of Gregory in a certain degree of completeness. There remained to me the twofold choice, either to give prominence only to the more weighty and generally important points, while I sacrificed the idea of completeness, or, while I aimed at this to a certain extent, to discuss also some detached and less attractive subjects. In the first case, I might probably have produced a more agreeable book, but then I should have been obliged also to satisfy the requirements of the



historical art in relation to the strictness of my choice. And since I did not wish to undertake this, I decided the more willingly on the second alternative, since I could thus, by a certain degree of completeness, make my work more useful to those readers who were engaged professionally in the study of the Fathers.

That my book is derived from the original sources,<sup>1</sup> every competent judge will perceive; but that I have not therefore overlooked the labours of historical compilers and inquirers is self-evident. And if I do not everywhere quote them, when I have had an eye to them, whether in the act of agreeing with or differing from them, it is because I did not wish to accumulate citations. I have principally made use of (after having first, with unbiassed mind, evolved the matter from the originals) Tillemont,<sup>2</sup> Le Clerc,<sup>3</sup> Schröckh,<sup>4</sup> Baronius,<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> I must here remark that I have quoted the writings of Gregory from the beautiful, but, alas! unfinished Benedictine edition, as far as it extends. It contains, however, only the Orations. The Latin title is: *S. Patris nostri Gregorii Theologi Opera omnia, quæ extant, — — operâ et studio Monachorum ordinis S. Benedicti e congregatione S. Mauri*. Tom. i. Paris. sumpt. viduæ Desaint, 1778. The chief editor is Clemencet. Would that he might, at some time and place, find a successor to complete that beautiful work! That which is not contained in that edition of Gregory's works has been generally quoted (and usually with express reference) from the following editions: *S. Gregorii Naz. Theologi Opera*. Jac. Billius Prunæus cum MSS. regis contulit, emendavit, etc. *Aucta est hæc editio aliquammultis ejusdem Gregorii Epistolis, nunquam antea editis ex interpr.* F. Morelli Lips. sumpt. Weidmanni, 1690. See, concerning the literary merits of this and other editions, Fabric. *Biblioth. Græca*, vol. viii. p. 398, seqq. ed Harl.

<sup>2</sup> *Mémoires pour servir à l'Hist. Eccles.* tom. ix. pp. 305—560, 692—731.

<sup>3</sup> *Bibliothèque Universelle*, tom. xviii. p. 1, seqq.

<sup>4</sup> *Christliche Kirchengeschichte*, Th. 13, S. 275—466.

<sup>5</sup> *Acta Sanctorum*. Maii, tom. ii. pp. 373—482.

Clemencet,<sup>1</sup> in their biographical notices of Gregory Nazianzen. Of these, Tillemont, without doubt, presents the most complete materials ; he is indeed over rich in that respect, and the total impression he should make disappears in the mass of isolated particulars ; while his, otherwise, pure and sincere piety does not allow him always to exercise the requisite criticism. Le Clerc is certainly more critical and more candid ; but he is less exact and truthful in some particulars, less diligent in the task of discovering the good qualities concealed under the disguising form of the age, and of elevating them therefrom. If Tillemont is too confiding and easy of belief, Le Clerc is distrustful and suspicious. Schröckh, as in his other writings, so also here, is discreet, impartial and solid ; but still (as could not well be otherwise, considering the extent of his work) he gives too little of the peculiar features, and has not even worked up with sufficient pains the materials already accumulated by Tillemont. Not so learned, and still less free from prejudice than that of Tillemont, is the biography which we find in Baronius's *Acta Sanctorum* : it gives evidence, however, of great familiarity with the writings of Gregory. This is true, also, in a still higher degree, of the biographical notices which are prefixed to the Benedictine edition of Gregory's Works ; they contain some very useful inquiries, but they do not form a whole. There is a very copious biography of Gregory and Basil by Hermant,<sup>2</sup> which I have not been able to make use of.

<sup>1</sup> For the edition of his works, *see* *Congreg. S. Mauri*, above-mentioned. It is not my intention here to specify all the biographies of Gregory. On this subject, *see* Fabric. *Biblioth. Gr.* vol. viii. pp. 383—387, and Schröckh's *K. Gesch.*, Th. 13, p. 161.

<sup>2</sup> *La Vie de S. Basile le Grand et celle de S. Gregoire de Nazianze*, par Godfr. Hermant ; à Paris, 1679,—in two stout quartos.

I have not made these critical remarks upon my predecessors, with the conviction of having avoided their faults and combined their respective excellences in my own production. It is always easier to discover failings than it is to improve upon them ; and I am fully conscious of the many deficiencies of my book. I hope, nevertheless, to gain a friendly reception from right-minded and impartial persons ; but I am quite as desirous of a straightforward, and (where necessary) a just and fair censure, and shall know how to respect the same.

To the learned men who have assisted me with books and friendly counsel (and whom I cannot here enumerate) I return my most hearty thanks.

As a conclusion to this, already perhaps too long, preface, I must make the following remark : the dogmatic system, for which Gregory called forth all his powers, appears to a great portion of our contemporaries of less weight, and to some even objectionable.\* But even they who in theory differ from Gregory, must acknowledge the force, the courage, and devoted activity, with which he supported his convictions ; and those who possess no strong conviction for which they would make any sacrifice, may yet have the generosity to praise the man who had. Still, to all, however they may be dogmatically inclined, Gregory must be an object of respectful veneration, as an ardent friend of practical Christianity ; since, while he contended for a dogmatic system which may not readily be reduced to practice, it was yet a main object with him, to draw off his hearers from mere theorizing and unseasonable disputes on religious questions, and direct them always to action

---

\* This remark, of course, applies to *Germany*.—*Translator*.



and life, as the only true path to happiness, and the indispensable preliminaries to a saving knowledge.

In this respect, the contemplation of such men as Gregory of Nazianzum, of Chrysostom, and others of like minds, is certainly profitable for our time also, because they were animated by a lively spirit of practical Christianity. That same active Christianity, which was the preserving and purifying salt amidst the dogmatic struggle and party rage of that era, is also a connecting and saving element for our dogmatizing, and, alas ! divided Church. This should be the standard round which all who are earnest in their religion should rally, in spite of many differences of opinion, for this is, and will continue to the last, the essential point in the scheme of christian salvation, viz. the sanctification of our wills and affections. Not that I would be thought to consider morality the only weighty matter in Christianity ; since the system of morals, which Christianity presents, is inseparably bound up with a firm foundation of religious conviction, and true christian sanctification is not to be imagined without the operating influence of the peculiar saving truths of Christ's religion. Still, however, it is the practical side of Christianity which offers the most points of union for the distracted theological parties of our time. It were better surely to give prominence to this point of agreement, instead of sharpening the spirit of antagonism by ever-repeated expressions of difference. That, however, I may not be misunderstood, let me conclude with the following confession and hearty wish :— May friends never be wanting (and assuredly they never will—they never can) to the support of that theology which aims at a true and lively conception of pure, *biblical* Christianity ; and this, as well in its historical

reality as in its exalted spirituality ; as well in its depth, as in its clearness, simplicity and practical influence ! May God prosper that theology, which considers Christianity, and religion generally, not in a one-sided view, as a matter of mere intellect and speculation, or even of mere feeling, but as the concern of the whole inner man, in the harmonious co-operation of his understanding, will, and feelings ! A theology, which seeks to combine philosophical information with historical erudition, reverence for a holy, unfeigned love of Christianity and its Founder with an unsophisticated regard for free, scientific inquiry ! To acquire this theology, this free christian science, and to labour for it, according to my powers, in that sphere which Providence assigns to me, I look upon as the highest duty and the greatest happiness of my life.

C. ULLMANN.

HEIDELBERG,

*August 28, 1825.*

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1

## SECTION THE FIRST.

### THE HISTORY OF HIS YOUTH.

CHAP.	
I. His Fatherland, his Family, his Birth and early Youth	13
II. His residence as a Student at Athens . . . . .	28

## SECTION THE SECOND.

### HIS MODE OF LIFE IN CAPPADOCIA, FROM HIS THIRTIETH TO HIS FORTY-NINTH YEAR.

I. Difference between his tone of mind and that of his brother Cæsarius . . . . .	44
II. His own Sketch of his Plan of Life . . . . .	48
III. Gregory in solitary Life . . . . .	54
IV. His public labours for the Establishment of Peace .	61
V. He is made a Presbyter, and soon after withdraws from Nazianzum . . . . .	66
VI. His relations to Julian . . . . .	74
<i>Sub-division, (a.)</i> State of Christianity, in relation to Heathenism, under Julian . . . . .	74
————— <i>(b.)</i> Julian's conduct towards Chris- tianity and its Professors . . . . .	81
————— <i>(c.)</i> Gregory's Writings against Julian	97
————— <i>(d.)</i> The position of Gregory and his Family, in relation to Julian . . . . .	104
VII. Gregory again employed as Peace-maker . . . . .	109
VIII. Basil elected Bishop of Cæsarea. Conduct of the Elder and Younger Gregory on that occasion . . . . .	114
IX. Gregory made Bishop of Sasima against his will; afterwards Coadjutor to his Father at Nazianzum .	122
X. Misfortunes in the Family of Gregory . . . . .	131
XI. The public Life and Labours of Gregory, as Coadjutor to his Father at Nazianzum . . . . .	137
XII. The Death of the Elder Gregory and his wife, Nonna; the Younger Gregory retires to Seleucia . . . . .	146



## SECTION THE THIRD.

## GREGORY AT CONSTANTINOPLE.—ÆT. 49 to 51.

CHAP.	PAGE
I. State of the Church at Constantinople . . . . .	155
II. Gregory collects a Congregation there . . . . .	166
III. He is persecuted there by three opposite parties . . .	174
IV. His Preaching and Private Life there . . . . .	183
V. His Fame. Hieronymus (Jerome) becomes his Pupil. The Philosopher Maximus . . . . .	195
VI. Gregory retires into the Country near Constantinople .	208
VII. Theodosius arrives at Constantinople; Triumph of the Nicene Faith. Gregory refuses the Bishopric of Constantinople . . . . .	219
VIII. He persists in that Refusal. His Frank Behaviour to all Classes . . . . .	229
IX. The Second Œcumenic Council at Constantinople, A.D. 381. Gregory regularly chosen Bishop of Constan- tinople . . . . .	237
X. He resigns his See, and leaves his Congregation . . .	246

## SECTION THE FOURTH.

FROM HIS FIFTY-FIRST TO HIS SIXTIETH YEAR, A.D. 390,  
THE DATE OF HIS DEATH.

I. Gregory enjoys Retirement and Release from Synods .	263
II. He still takes an active Concern in Church Matters and in the Welfare of his Friends . . . . .	273
III. Gregory's Epistles and Poems . . . . .	286
IV. Gregory's Death; his Character . . . . .	293

## APPENDIX I.

Concerning the Year and Place of Gregory's Birth . . . .	299
--	-----

## APPENDIX II.

Concerning the Sect of the Hypsistarians . . . . .	308
--	-----

# L I F E

OF

## GREGORY OF NAZIANZUM.

---

### INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

CHRISTIANITY, the bright central-point in the world's history, with which the old time closes and the new begins, appeared in the course of human development when its presence, spiritually and morally, was most urgently required. At the period to which we are about to transfer ourselves in the following reflections, it had operated with quiet but immense influence for nearly three centuries. The human race, having outgrown the leading-strings of a ceremonial, legal religion, and risen above the religion of Nature, and the worship of the beautiful, had acquired a new life in this religion of spirituality and morality. And although Judaism still dragged on its weary existence, and heathenism still stood like a huge colossus compacted into the body of the Roman empire, yet both were already as good as annihilated, by that simple word (which yet, in its effects, comprehended the whole human race), spoken by Jesus to the woman of Samaria at the well of Jacob : ' God is a Spirit, and they who worship Him, must worship Him in spirit and in truth.'

As a religion of faith, Christianity gave courage and joyfulness in a new and better life to Man, weighed

down by his sins, and despairing of recovery; as a religion of love, it bound him by the purest ties, to God, as his father, and to all men, as members of a large family; as a religion of hope, it opened to him the gates of everlasting life, and introduced him to a kingdom of God, which comprehends both worlds.

Difference of rank could no longer make a difference in the participation of religious blessings. The Deity had come forth from the darkness of the temple, from priestly and philosophic mysteries, into the light of universal knowledge. The profoundest truths were proclaimed from the house-tops in the plainest garb, and the meanest slave could partake as fully, and in the self-same manner, in all the blessings of the purer faith, as the prince upon the throne. Nor was one nation to be favoured more than another, because God could now be worshipped in spirit and in truth, wherever a human mind could think, or a human heart beat; and because the simple faith of the Christian, a faith working in love, can be exercised, as well in the north as in the south, and is dependent on no national peculiarity of custom or constitution. In Christianity there is nothing national or confined; it is the religion of the nations, of mankind—adapted in its fundamental features to unite all nations, notwithstanding any external marks of separation, into one vast spiritual community.

But, though suited to all nations, this faith was intended to be spread only by the free motion of the mind, and the influence of pure conviction, and if slowly, and after thousands of years, yet so much the more surely to overspread the world in the way thus worthy of its Divine Author. The faith which depends on the point of the sword, sinks with the sword, (so that



Islamism must fall to pieces whenever its professors shall cease to be warlike,) but the faith which is sown in the mind expands with the general development of the mind. As the leaven gradually, and without any external aid, pervades the whole mass; as the grain of mustard arrives at its full height by a slow process, and by virtue of an innate power; so it is in the nature of Christianity to pervade mankind, gradually purifying, strengthening, fructifying; and so, from the in-dwelling plastic mental impulse, without the action of external power (which checks, rather than promotes the inner life), it grows and ripens into that divine tree, whose fruits and peaceful shade are for the enjoyment of the nations. Far from calling in the aid of external power, Christianity, from the first, rather entered into a contest therewith, proving by that very fact the entire efficacy of the faith which conquers the world. The calm, confiding heroism of the first Christians, equally removed from stoic indifference and effeminate pliability, confidently opposed itself to the monstrous power of the Roman empire, and it was amidst oppression and struggles, privation and self-denial, that all the virtues of the christian mind were developed.

But with the commencement of the fourth century Christianity ascended the imperial throne, the struggling community of believers became a dominant Church, and—alas!—with that very change lost so much of its youthful beauty and innocence. Divine Providence, however, had ordered this external victory, and (as we cannot but believe) it had here also its special purposes in relation to the moral training of the whole human race. Yet, we must nevertheless regret that, through human infirmity, this public triumph of Christianity became the

cause of such manifold internal decay in the lives of its professors. Ease and repose succeeded to continual struggle, and the ardent zeal of many waxed cold. Instead of oppression, the Christians enjoyed favour and influence, till, from being persecuted, they became persecutors. Shame and want no longer accompanied the confession of Christ's name, but honour and emolument were often connected with it; and this soon tempted a great many persons to enter into the Church, whose hearts were as far removed as possible from the unselfish spirit of the Gospel. From this cause also the bond of union between fellow-Christians was relaxed, their brotherly love grew colder and less active, their zeal for all that concerned the christian community diminished. The professors of the Gospel, who had once distinguished themselves by the most perfect simplicity of life, and by a cheerful renunciation of all its enjoyments and many of its necessities, now became as eager in the pursuit of pleasure and as luxurious as the heathens, whom they had blamed on that account.

'We,' says the author whose life I propose to write, of the Christians of his time, 'we repose in state upon high and splendid couches, covered with the most exquisite coverlids, which one scarcely dares touch, and we are annoyed if we do but hear the voice and weeping of a poor man; our chamber must be fragrant with flowers, and of the rarest sort. Our table must overflow with the finest-scented and most costly ointments, so that we become perfectly effeminate. Slaves must stand ready, gaily bedeckt and in fair array, with flowing, girl-like hair, with smooth shorn faces, and wantonly adorned; some of them trained, with equal grace and firmness, to bear the cup with the extreme points of their fingers,

and others to fan the cool air with all adroitness above our heads. Our board must bend under the weight of viands, whilst all the kingdoms of Nature—earth, water, air,—furnish such liberal contributions, that the handiworks of the cook and the baker can scarcely find a place there. . . . . The poor man is content with water, but we fill our goblets with wine to intoxication, yea, with a degree of excess beyond it; we disdain one sort of wine, another we pronounce excellent for its fine flavour; we engage in philosophical reflections upon a third; nay, we think ourselves ill-treated unless foreign wine, as at a king's banquet, be added to the wine of our country.'

The worldly spirit, which pervaded more and more all classes of Christians, displayed itself especially in those who were placed at the head of the christian community, the clergy. They who before had been particularly exposed, as leaders of the christian party, to hatred and persecution, now also became special objects for the patronage and favour of the great, though at the same time they partially became instruments for carrying out those great ones' plans. They now obtained the freedom and privileges of the state, they acquired the means of enriching the Church and themselves, they attained to political influence, they became men of consideration and weight at court; but with all this, and in the same proportion, they lost sight of the one essential thing, to be true and plain enunciators of the simple doctrine of salvation, patterns of good morals, advisers, helpers, fathers of the congregations committed to their care.

Persecution and oppression had been, as for the Christians generally, so especially for the clergy, a fiery

ordeal, and a school of purification; worldly-minded men were scared away thereby, hirelings fell off in the time of need, and the majority that remained to the Church, were men who served it with devotion and pure affection. But it was now possible for an individual, in the direct path of ecclesiastical duties, (and even without any intellectual exertion, or solid, scientific acquirements) to secure the enjoyment of external prosperity; and thus, those very persons who, by their tone of thought, were least qualified to become pious teachers of the truth and labourers for the souls of men, were most attracted by the splendour of the bishoprics. Even amongst the better clergy, who were not led away by the prevailing selfishness, a false desire of pleasing and of shining had, by virtue of their new position, insinuated itself. It was now no longer a small connected community of brethren, among whom the pastor lived as a father, administering exhortation and correction, and, while he kept the great cause steadily before his eyes, so speaking as he felt convinced in his own heart; but it was a vast, promiscuous assemblage, spoilt by the varied gratifications of the ear, before whom he was expected to appear as an orator, who should agreeably entertain the less instructed and confirmed, and carry with him his hearer by the force and beauty of his discourse. The clergy, for the most part brought up in the schools of rhetoric, were declaimers, the pulpit became a stage, and the same tokens of applause attended the actor in holy places as in the theatre. The congregations in large cities, such as Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, could in general be worked upon only by means of showy forms; and even those men, who were most earnestly devoted to the cause, were obliged



to employ many artifices, and to depart far from genuine christian simplicity, if they would not sacrifice what was of greater importance. The worship itself had also from the same cause become more rich and splendid. Since the spirit of religion had fallen off, men sought to make up for it by forms; ceremonies addressed to the imagination were to be substitutes for the fervour of christian feeling, and as there began to be a deficiency of religion in the transactions of common life, they made so much the greater display of it in the service of the Church.

It is not, however, here implied, either that the three first centuries were to be praised unconditionally, or that nothing but corruption pervaded the Church everywhere in the fourth. Already, in the time of the apostles, there was a Judas Iscariot. From the earliest period many unworthy members sat in the assemblies of the Christians, and many a germ of future corruption was planted even in the first centuries; while, on the other side, the fourth century produced some of the most distinguished Christians, the noblest christian families; for at no period, and under no form, have there been wanting true professors of the everlasting gospel, or faithful members of the invisible church. We speak here of the greater and the less in the scale of Christianity, and of the predominant spirit of the earlier and the later time.

Another evil presents itself to us in this later period, when we contemplate Christianity from another point of view. It belongs to the divine qualities of Christianity, that, though combating selfishness in the individual heart to its inmost recesses, it yet by no means annihilates intellectual peculiarity, but rather illustrates and sanctifies it in its free development. It would be con-

trary to its essence to refuse 'to become all things to all men, in order to gain all,' and it has thus produced within its influence a boundless mine of spiritual and mental phenomena. This comprehensive, gentle spirit was established by Christianity from the beginning. Already, in the time of the apostles, we see the fundamental forms of different directions of mind existing by the side of each other within the Christian community. *One* spirit animated the apostles, but exhibited itself differently, according to their human peculiarities. This is plainly shown to us in the historical narratives of the four evangelists. The three first conceived and expressed, in clear and general features, many individual points in the Messianic ministry of Jesus among his Jewish countrymen; but with equal truth and fidelity does St. John exhibit him as the Son of God, and the moral Redeemer of all mankind. It is, however, from both representations taken together that we derive the complete picture of Him, who was as well the expected Messiah of his people, as (in this sense at least) the not-expected Saviour of the human race. Just so we see reposing together, and harmoniously supplying what each wanted (in order to exhibit to the ardent, unworldly, contemplative mind the entire fulness of the christianized human mind), the profound, earnest feeling of a John; the ever-active, and yet speculative, thoughtful, enlarged, free intellect of a Paul; and the heroic, fiery zeal of a Peter, teaching by deeds. All of them, however, subserved one great object, and the more effectually from this very diversity of gifts.

In like manner, we also find in the centuries immediately following a rich store of varied talents and gifted men in the Christian Church; the practical sim-

plicity of the Apostolic Fathers; the more scientific treatment of christian truths by the first founders of a christian theology, the Apologists; the realistic bias of the African teachers, the idealistic turn of the Alexandrian; the more sober, sensible, critical tone of the early school of Antioch; the predominant tendency to theoretic speculation in the Eastern divines; the greater zeal for the immediate and practical in those of the Western Church. We find friends and opposers of philosophy, learned and unlearned men, supporters both of the allegorical and of the historical exposition,—all labouring together in active life, making good what each wanted in this variety of direction, but also, at the same time, restrained and limited by antagonism, while they were opposed in beneficial contest, in order that a one-sided argument might not be carried to extremes, and the predominance of one mode of thought and one dogmatic form might not crush the free life of christian truth. It is pleasant to contemplate this activity of mental energy, and to observe how the most varied directions of thought (which, if isolated and exclusive, would have been highly detrimental) promoted most powerfully the development of the inward life, amid their simultaneous action and mutual contests.

But the free course of this development was completely checked, when in the fourth century external force was introduced into a contest hitherto carried on by intellectual weapons. Now (far otherwise) outward means of compulsion were thrown into the scales of opinion along with internal principles and convictions. Now, all thinking men were required to understand a christian truth in precisely the same formula. Now, episcopal assemblages (the members of which were not

always the most pious or the most judicious of the clergy, while the greater number could by no means be considered as pure instruments of the Holy Spirit) determined upon the admissibility and objectionableness of different formulæ, stamping one set with the seal of divine authority, branding others with the mark of condemnation. Now, that which had been decided by such an assembly (and that oftentimes under anything but free discussion) was carried out into actual life by the support of the civil law and external power, occasionally not without the application of violence and bloodshed. Now it was that a Byzantine court-theology was formed, which, commencing from small beginnings, by degrees came to such a point, that a Justinian was able, by the same act of power, to make a spiritual as well as a civil legislator, and that, under the ægis of his authority, an Origen and a Theodorus of Mopsuestia, though long in the grave, were yet condemned by persons who were not capable of comprehending the greatness of their mind, and not worthy to loosen the latchet of their shoe. Now, instead of peace being restored by the strong arm of power, the polemical disputes of the Christians with each other were kindled with the more violence, when they no longer had any external enemy to contend with. The whole Roman empire, from its head to its meanest subject, was in commotion, for the establishment of one dogmatic formula and the suppression of another; East and West were torn asunder; cities and families were full of disquiet; all was dogmatic and polemic, and this, in very few instances, from religious interests. It was a time of frightful party-spirit. But where parties exist, religious, political, or scientific, there is intolerance and



persecution, be it open or concealed, with the weapon of the tongue or pen, or with those of force and violence; there is no just mutual estimate of views and efforts;—there, personal ties and relations are poisoned; there, the difference of opinion is traced to the most dishonourable sources; the opponent in principles is looked upon as a personal enemy, the erring as a criminal; and, generally, every individual, without regard to his real worth, is only that which he is to his party.

It was in such an age, when the Christian Church no longer wore its most amiable features, that Gregory Nazianzen lived. But it is exactly in his conflict with such an age (especially during his, properly public, labours and ministrations in Constantinople) that many of his excellent qualities will stand out the brighter, while that which was rigid and repulsive in his character will assume a milder aspect.

## SECTION THE FIRST.

## THE HISTORY OF HIS YOUTH:

FROM HIS BIRTH TO THE THIRTIETH YEAR OF HIS AGE,—THAT IS,  
FROM ABOUT THE YEAR 330 TO 360.

**C**HRONOLOGICAL SURVEY:—We begin with the year 325. Just at the time when the Cappadocian bishops set out to join the Council of Nicæa, and during the stay of some of them at Nazianzum, Gregory's father (who was already a married man) was baptized. It was probably a few years after the Council that, in the person of our Gregory, was born one of the acutest and most zealous future defenders of its decisions. The childhood of Gregory (whose birth, on probable grounds, we assume to have taken place A.D. 330) falls under the last period of the reign of Constantine the Great, who died in 337; his youth passed entirely under that of Constantius, who, after his father's death, was emperor of the East, and after the death of his brother (*i. e.*, from 350) ruled over the whole empire. The church history of the whole period is filled with violent contests between the Arian and the Nicene parties; the first of these were favoured by Constantius in the East, the latter by Constans in the West. Quite, or nearly of the same age with Gregory is the Imperial Prince Julian (born A.D. 331), so that they also pursue their studies at Athens at the same time, A.D. 355.

## CHAPTER I.

HIS FATHER-LAND—HIS FAMILY—HIS BIRTH AND EARLY YOUTH.

RESPECTED as Gregory was during his lifetime, and honoured as he was after his death (which, among other proofs, is attested by the fact, that to him alone, since the apostle St. John, the distinctive title of 'Ο Θεόλογος, or The Divine, was conceded), yet no positive account as to the place and time of his birth is extant.<sup>1</sup> The little town of Nazianzum in the south-west part of Cappadocia, though neither of considerable size, nor remarkable for its pleasant situation,<sup>2</sup> has become famous from the circumstance, that Gregory usually bears the title of *Nazianzen*, or the Nazianzian, derived from thence. But whether that were because Gregory was born, or because he spent a great part of his life there, is a point not decided. An ancient account, not altogether to be rejected, affirms that Gregory came into the world at a certain estate or village called Arianzum, in the neighbourhood of Nazianzum. It is without doubt, however, that Cappadocia was his father-land. The accounts of the moral condition of the land of his birth at that period are anything but favourable. The Cappadocians

---

<sup>1</sup> See the Appendix on both these points.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxiii. 6, p. 607. Gregory himself puts it, as a reproach, into the mouth of an opponent: μικρά σοι ἡ πόλις καὶ οὐδέ πόλις, ἀλλὰ χωρίον ξηρόν καὶ ἄχαρι, καὶ ὀλίγοις οἰκοῦμενον. *Orat.* xix. 11, p. 370. Gregory speaks of his father as Bishop of Nazianzum: τοῦτο τοῦ μικροπολίτου τὸ ἔργον, καὶ τῆς καθ' ἑδρας τὰ δεύτερα ἔχοντος. And in *Carmen* v., 25, p. 75, where Nazianzum appears under the name of Cæsarea (compare Tillemont's *Memoirs*, tom. ix. p. 692):

Γρηγορίου μνήσταιτο τὸν ἔτρεφε Καππαδόκεσσι  
Ἡ Διοκαίσαρέων ὀλίγη πτολις.

of that time are represented to us as a cowardly, slavish, quarrelsome, suspicious people, prone to avarice and sensuality, liars, and faithless.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory himself frequently laments the laxity of morals among his countrymen—that is, of Nazianzum; and the Cappadocians were even generally infamous in popular proverbs, in company with the Carians and Cretans.<sup>2</sup> Accustomed of old to priestly domination and a state of vassalage, the Cappadocians, at a later period, did not choose to accept the freedom of the

<sup>1</sup> The vouchers for this occur chiefly in a series of epistles by Isidorus of Pelusium, who flourished no long time after Gregory, at the beginning of the fifth century. Compare lib. i. epist. 351, 352; epist. 485—490. Lib. iv. epist. 197. But more especially, lib. i. epist. 281, where, among others, it is said of the Cappadocians: ὕπουλον γὰρ καὶ πονηρὸν ὡς ἐπίπαν τὸ γένος, εἰρήνην μὲν οὐ τερπόμενον, ἔριδι δὲ τρεφόμενον, — ἀπατηλὸν, ἀναιδές, θρασὺν, δειλὸν, σκωπτικὸν, ἀνελεύθερον, δόλιον, μισάνθρωπον, ὑπεροπτικὸν, — πρὸς ψευδὸς ὀξὺν, πρὸς τὸ παρορκῆσαι ταχύ. Undoubtedly, such general descriptions of national character have often no grounds to rest upon but prejudice or national hatred; yet, in this case, many circumstances tend to prove that Isidore's delineation, though probably somewhat exaggerated, is still not untrue. To touch more particularly one point only in heathen antiquity,—the domination of the *priests of Comana* must have been very injurious to the nation. Exercising authority equal, or even superior to that of the king, they possessed extraordinary wealth, invested in finely situated estates, and, in Strabo's time, 6000 slaves (*ieroδούλοι*) of both sexes, employed partly in tilling the land. The king also, and the principal families, were proprietors of the soil, and the peasants were obliged to work for them in a state of vassalage.—Strabo, xii. p. 809. Other particulars relating to the subject may be found in Heyne's *Commentatio de Sacerdotio Comanensi*, in the *Commentaries of the Gottingen Society*, vol. xvi. p. 101, and, particularly, p. 140. We shall find, therefore, the words of Isidore (lib. i. epist. 487) very characteristic of the Cappadocians: οἷς ὁ βίος οὐκ ἄλλοθεν ἢ ἐκ δουλείας καὶ γεηπονίας συνίσταται.

<sup>2</sup> *Τρία κάππα κάκιστα*. See Erasmus *Adagia*, pp. 309 and 154. Edit. Francof.



Roman city, which was offered to them;<sup>1</sup> and in the succeeding centuries the relations of the military government, into which Cappadocia was incorporated as a province, were by no means adapted to operate favourably upon morals. Harsh and exacting greediness on the part of the imperial officers, refractoriness and revolt on the side of the degraded people, meet us too often in the history of that period, and even in the history of Gregory.

But in the midst of a degenerate race a higher spirit is ever wont to awaken its ministers and instruments; and men of nobler natures set themselves the more boldly and steadily in opposition to their corrupt contemporaries. Thus we find that even Cappadocia produced, in the course of the fourth century, a succession of very distinguished Fathers of the Church.<sup>2</sup> These men,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Strabo, xii., p. 815. Justin., xxviii. 2. Sed Cappadoces munus libertatis abnuentes, negant vivere gentem sine rege posse.

<sup>2</sup> Isidore of Pelusium says, in this respect, of a part of the Cappadocians: ἐστι γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἑτέρα μοῖρα καππαδοκῶν παναριστος, ἀφ' ἧς ἐκεῖνοι γεγόνασιν, οἱ πανταχοῦ τῷ φωτὶ τῆς αὐτῶν πολιτείας καὶ νομοθεσίας τὰ τῆς γῆς δαδουχήσαντες τέρατα.—Lib. i. epist. 158. In another letter (l. i. ep. 352) he remarks to a friend, who could not bring himself to believe that such excellent men could have sprung from Cappadocian origin—that these very distinguished individuals and pious men very clearly proved the general corruption, since it is shown thereby that it is no moral natural defect, *πονηρία ἔμφυτος*, but their own individual fault, that had contributed to the production of their decay.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 188, p. 850. Gregory says, 'To honour one's mother is a holy duty; but every one has another mother;—the common mother of all is our *native country*.' *Orat.* xliii. p. 772. 'Cappadocia produces not only excellent horses, but also noble young men.' Gregory praises the Cappadocians in reference to their orthodoxy, *Orat.* xliii. 33, p. 796. He bestows very high praise, by name, on an inhabitant of the chief city of Cappadocia, *Orat.* iv. 92, p. 126. Unfortunately, we do not always know

although often driven to a solitary life from natural inclination, and from the moral circumstances which surrounded them, yet, when they resumed their place in society, influenced the more powerfully the sentiments of their cotemporaries, as well by the earnestness of their bearing, as by the secret power of mind upon mind. And thus we are again justified in declaring that Gregory speaks with a kind of self-consciousness of *his* Cappadocia, and that it was a heartfelt object with him to deliver the sacred soil of his fatherland from the heavy charge of an universal corruption.

In particular families, also, there is often maintained a better and a purer spirit. The domestic associations of the boy Gregory were entirely calculated to implant in his early awakened mind the fruitful germs of piety. He himself gives us a sketch of his parents' character with filial affection, but (it is to be lamented) in that oratorical, laudatory tone, which presents rather general features, than an accurate picture taken from the life. If he indulges in fancy here and there, after his manner, (though he expressly labours to guard against it,)<sup>1</sup> still the sketch is so far valuable to us, as it presents us, in a striking manner, with the moral view of that generation.

A circumstance, which we have to remark in connexion with so many great men (and especially among the Fathers), viz., that the direction of their mind and disposition was given to them by their mothers,<sup>2</sup>

---

with any certainty how we are to deal with such rhetorical passages.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* viii. 1. p. 218.

<sup>2</sup> What extraordinary and beneficial effects Christianity exercised on the position of married females, and on the social state

presents itself also in the case of Gregory, on whose youthful soul the strict, ardent piety of his mother, endowed as she also was with manly virtues, exercised more influence than the more quiet and gentler nature of his father. *Nonna* (for that was his mother's name) was born of a respectable christian family, and had been educated with care in the christian faith.<sup>1</sup> 'She was' (according to the picture sketched of her by her son)<sup>2</sup> 'a housewife after Solomon's mind; submissive to her husband in all things according to the law of marriage, yet not ashamed to be his teacher and guide in the practice of true piety. She solved the difficult problem, how to unite a high state of cultivation, especially in the knowledge of heavenly things, and a strict exercise of devotion, with punctual attention to domestic duties. Was she busily engaged in household cares?—she seemed to know nothing of the exercises of devotion; was she occupied with God and his worship?—all earthly business seemed strange to her, so *entirely* was she devoted to each. Experience had taught her an unlimited confidence in the effects of the prayer of faith; she was, therefore, most diligent in prayer, and overcame even the deepest sense of pain, for her own and for others'

---

of the sex in general, is well known. Not so well known are the services which noble-minded women have rendered in the spreading and the establishing of Christianity, and principally by their educating sons, who afterwards acted a great part as distinguished Fathers of the Church. Some excellent remarks on this influence of pious women occur in Neander's *Denkwürdigkeiten*, vol. ii. p. 76.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 4, p. 200: μήτηρ ἄνωθεν μὲν καὶ ἐκ προγόνων καθερομένη Θεῷ—ἐξ ἀγίας ἀπαρχῆς ὄντως ἅγιον φέραμα: and a like passage in *Orat.* xviii. 11, p. 337.

<sup>2</sup> The whole of this description, here briefly given, is to be found in *Orat.* xviii. 7, p. 334—337.

sorrows, by the energy of prayer. She had attained thereby such self-control, that in all the afflictions that befel her she never uttered a lamentation, till she had thanked God for the same. She thought it unbecoming to shed tears, or put on mourning garments on christian festival-days, so entirely was she penetrated with the thought—*a soul filled with love of God should esteem everything human subordinate to that which is divine.*<sup>1</sup> Still more important than the exercises of devotion (which yet, after the notion of those days, she carried out to the weakening of her body) did she consider the *more active* service of God, the relieving of widows and orphans, the visiting of the poor and the sick. Her liberality was inexhaustible, degenerating almost into sensibility; so that (as her son relates) she often said, if it were practicable, she could sell herself and her children, that she might give to the poor the money thence arising.<sup>2</sup> In company with these beautiful traits in Gregory's portrait of his mother, we also find traces of an anxious, legal, and narrow-minded piety, rather than a free, spiritual tone of religion. It was not enough that she showed her reverence for God's service by a quiet and becoming behaviour,<sup>3</sup> but 'she did not even dare to turn her back to the holy table, or to spit<sup>4</sup> on the pavement of the church. She was intolerant towards heathen women, so that she never offered her

---

<sup>1</sup> Ψυχῆς γὰρ εἶναι θεοφιλοῦς ὑποκλίνειν τοῖς θεοῖς ἅπαν ἀνθρώπινον.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 21, p. 344.

<sup>3</sup> Οἷον τὸ μήποτε φωνὴν αὐτῆς ἐν ἱεροῖς ἀκουσθῆναι συλλόγοις, ἢ τόποις, ἔξω τῶν ἀναγκαίων καὶ μυστικῶν (i.e., at the celebration of the Lord's Supper.)

The translator gives this literally, but with an apology to English ears.



hand or mouth for any of them to salute. She ate no salt with those who came from the unholy altars of their false gods.<sup>1</sup> She never suffered her eyes to rest upon heathen temples, much less would she have crossed their threshold. She was as little inclined to visit the theatre.'

Nonna was united to a worthy man, who was also called Gregorius. Nothing would have been wanting to the happiness of this union had her otherwise excellent husband been a Christian. But he belonged to a community, the members of which, as it seems, mixed up together some Jewish and Persian notions, and without being devoted to a positive creed, paid honours after a very simple fashion to the *Supreme God*, (τῷ ὑψίστῳ Θεῷ,) and were thence called *Hypsistarians*,<sup>2</sup> or worshippers of the Most High. This lay like a stone on the heart of Nonna, who had been brought up as a strict Christian; supported by constant prayer, she made every effort for the conversion of her husband to Christianity.<sup>3</sup> She urged him with entreaties, exhortations, and threats; but, above all, she laboured to recommend her faith to him by active piety and affectionate treatment. Gregorius was overcome; a dream fortifies his resolution, or rather guides him to a fuller and clearer light. He seems in his sleep to be singing the commencement of the 122nd Psalm: 'I was glad when they said unto me, We will go into the House of the Lord.' Nonna seizes the wished-for

---

<sup>1</sup> Ἀλλὰ μηδὲ ἀλῶν κοινωνῆσαι, μὴ ὅτι ἔκουσαν, ἀλλὰ μηδὲ βιασθεῖσαν τοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς βεβήλου καὶ ἀνάγνου τραπέζης.

<sup>2</sup> See the Appendix concerning the Hypsistarians.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 11, p. 327.

moment, and persuades her spouse to accompany her to the christian church. Just at that time there chanced to be at Nazianzum several bishops, who were on their way to Nicæa, to attend the great council appointed to be held there by Constantine; among them was Leontius, bishop of the chief city of Cappadocia. After a short period of instruction, Gregorius was baptized in their presence. The circumstance of his receiving this instruction, not like the other catechumens, in a standing, but in a kneeling posture, was taken as an omen of his future dignity, since bishops were wont to kneel at their consecration. Not content with this, some of the bystanders avouched that they saw the head of Gregorius, as he emerged from the baptismal water, surrounded with a brilliant light; and even the bishop who baptized him is said to have uttered a prophetic word respecting the future destination of the newly-baptized to the office of bishop.<sup>1</sup>

After allowing some time to elapse, for order's sake,<sup>2</sup> Gregorius became priest, and superintendent of the church at Nazianzum, an appointment to which, according to all appearance, he had been already destined by the bishops who were present at his baptism. The

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 13, p. 339. The minister who baptized Gregorius broke out into the prophetic words : ὅτι τὸν ἑαυτοῦ διάδοχον τῷ πνεύματι χρίσειεν. It is clear from this (as the Benedictine editors rightly remark, in opposition to Baronius and Papebroch), that not Leontius of Cæsarea, but the then Bishop of Nazianzum was the minister who baptized him. The respective judgments of Tillemont and Le Clerc upon this supposed miracle are in remarkable contrast, and very characteristic of both writers. For that of the first, see his *Memoirs*, vol. ix. p. 314; for that of the other, the *Biblioth. Universelle*, vol. xviii. p. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 16, p. 340 : πιστεύεται μὲν γε τὴν ἱερωσύνην, οὐ κατὰ τὴν νῦν ἐκκολίαν καὶ ἀταξίαν, ἀλλὰ μικρόν τι διάλιπών.

christian community of that city had for a long time had no bishop worthy of the name, and was become rather irregular.<sup>1</sup> Gregorius certainly, from his previous mode of life, could have had no especial theological training (although, according to his son's account, he laboured here also to make up for his deficiency), but he possessed a pious, earnest, and, at the same time, a gentle mind, with an active zeal for promoting the good of his community. He displayed much vigour in the contest for the Nicene creed, to which he attached himself, against the Arian party for some time triumphant,<sup>2</sup> much gentleness and forbearance to the erring members of his flock. 'He was a man' (it is thus his son represents him) 'of an ardent spirit, but of a tranquil countenance; his life was full of elevation, his mind of humility; his disposition was plain and just, pious and devout, without affectation and hypocrisy; his dress was neat, but ordinary and simple; his conversation gentle and engaging; he gave cheerfully, but in general left the pleasure of giving to his wife.'<sup>3</sup> In a course of active exertion, beneficial alike to his city and his congregation, this man, honoured and revered by his fellow-citizens, attained to almost a hundred years, during forty-five of which he had been an ecclesiastic.<sup>4</sup> The younger Gregorius often takes a pleasure in comparing his pious, aged parents with Abraham and Sarah.

These parents had three children; a daughter, named Gorgonia, and two sons, Gregorius and Cæsarius. Our Gregorius, or Gregory, was (as was often wont to happen in those days), even before his birth, dedicated to the

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 16, p. 340, et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 37, p. 358.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 6, p. 334; 23, p. 345.

<sup>4</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 38, p. 358.

clerical profession, or, in the more pious language of antiquity, given to God. Nonna had wished for a male child, and promised to give him back entirely to the service of God, from whom her prayers had obtained him.<sup>1</sup> When she had actually given birth to a son, she hastened with the child to the church, and laid his little hands on the Holy Scriptures, in token of his dedication.<sup>2</sup> Gregory afterwards often compared himself with Samuel, dedicated by his mother Hannah to God's service, even before his birth.

We may suppose that Nonna brought up the son bestowed upon her in a full knowledge of her vow, and, therefore, thoughts and feelings may have early developed themselves in his soul, which otherwise are wont to be very rare at such an age.<sup>3</sup> Under the influence of his mother's teaching, he conceived an inclination for the unmarried state, and was confirmed therein by a dream.<sup>4</sup> This bias Gregory retained throughout his life. He

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de se ipso et advers. Episcop.*, l. 805, p. 70.

Θεῶν,  
'Ὅτι πρὶν γενέσθαι μ' ἢ τεκοῦσ' ὑπέσχετο.

See also, *Carmen de Rebus suis*, l. 426—439. *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 8, et seq. p. 2. *Orat.* xviii. 337. *Orat.* ii. p. 49.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm.* i. *de Rebus suis*, l. 440, p. 38. Βίβλιοισι δ' ἐμὰς χεῖρας ἤγγρισε θείαις.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm.* i. *de Reb. suis*, l. 456, p. 39.

<sup>4</sup> *Carmen* iv. l. 205, pp. 71, 72. The dream was as follows:—  
'Two lovely virgins, of equal age and equal beauty, seemed to come down to him. Both were simply dressed and unadorned; they had long white garments, reaching to the feet, fastened closely with a girdle. Their faces were covered with a veil, which, however, did not prevent their downcast eyes, the blush of modesty on their cheeks, and around their soft, closed mouths, from being seen. They both had somewhat of an unearthly air, but yet they advanced to meet the boy in a friendly and affectionate manner. On his inquiring their names, they said they were called *Purity* and *Chastity*; that they were companions of



showed himself in his discourses and poems, as well as in his actual life, an admirer of the unwedded, virgin state, without, however, denying the blessing attached to marriage as a divine ordinance. Strange as this mode of thought may appear in a mere boy, yet it contributed, in Gregory's case, to elevate the earnest temperament of his soul, and directed all his efforts so much the more to an inner, spiritual world. His parents gave him the Holy Scriptures to read,<sup>1</sup> and made every effort to procure him a comprehensive, scientific education, to which a bias was already existing in his mind. A fondness for the study of eloquence soon showed itself in him most especially, and he looked upon it as a means of defending the truth with so much the greater power.<sup>2</sup>

The young man was not able to satisfy this powerful impulse towards higher cultivation in the insignificant little city of Nazianzum. His wealthy father<sup>3</sup> sent him, first of all, to Cæsarea, the capital of the province,<sup>4</sup>

---

Jesus Christ, and friends to those who, in order to lead a perfectly godly life, renounced all earthly connexions. Having exhorted the boy to unite himself in spirit with them, they ascended again to heaven.'

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, l. 99, p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, l. 113, p. 2. . . . καὶ γὰρ ἐζήτουν λόγους δοῦναι βοήθους τοὺς νόθους τοῖς γνησίοις.

<sup>3</sup> That the elder Gregory was very wealthy, is proved by the fact of his having built, chiefly at his own expense, a splendid church for the christian community of Nazianzum. *Orat.* xviii. 39, p. 359. But his son says decidedly (*Orat.* xviii. 20, p. 343). ἐπειδὴ καὶ οἶκον ἐμερισειν αὐτῷ, καὶ κτῆσιν σύμμετρον, ὃ πάντα καλῶς καὶ ποικίλως οἰκονομῶν Θεός. If therefore, addressing his father (*Orat.* iii. 6, p. 70), he says, δι' ἣν (Θείαν κληρονομίαν) πλούσιος σὺ, κὰν ἦς πένης, this is only to be taken rhetorically, or as a possible case. The extraordinary acts of beneficence, also, for which Gregory extols his mother would not have been practicable without great resources.

<sup>4</sup> *Gregor. Presbyter in Vita Gregor. Nazianz.*, p. 127; and particularly *Greg. Naz. Orat.*, xliii. 13, p. 779.

where the sciences were then cultivated, and not without success, particularly as several learned bishops had successively filled the episcopal chair there. It is highly probable that Gregory's first acquaintance commenced here with Basilus (or Basil),<sup>1</sup> a young man of a like mind, who being nearly of the same age, and having been brought up in a similar spirit, shared with him his studious efforts, an acquaintance which subsequently ripened into the most intimate friendship, dedicated by a kindred zeal to the holiest objects. An ardent love of science had brought both youths hither; the same ardour again separated them. Basil went to Constantinople, and Gregory to Cæsarea, in Palestine, where the schools at that time were famous for the successful cultivation of oratory.<sup>2</sup> Gregory's preceptor in Palestine (according to the testimony of Jerome),<sup>3</sup> was the rhetorician, Thespesius; one of his fellow-students was Euzoius, afterwards celebrated as bishop of the Palestine Cæsarea.

A lively taste for learning prevailed of old in several of the christian communities of Palestine and Syria. Edessa in Osroene, Antioch, and Cæsarea, had been, or were become, flourishing seats of christian science, which found copious nourishment in excellent libraries (*e.g.*, the celebrated collection of Pamphilus, in Cæsarea).

<sup>1</sup> That Gregory did not first make Basil's acquaintance at Athens, appears plainly from *Orat.* xliii. 14, p. 780. Where else should they have become acquainted rather than in Basil's native city?

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* vii. p. 6, 201 : ἐγὼ μὲν τοῖς κατὰ Παλαιστίνην ἐγκαταμείνας παιδευτηρίοις, ἀνθοῦσι τότε κατὰ ρητορικῆς ἔρωτα.

<sup>3</sup> Hieronym. *de Viris Illustr.*, cap. 113, p. 203. Euzoius apud Thespesium rhetorem, cum Gregorio Nazianzeno episcopo, adolescens Cæsareæ eruditus est; et ejusdem postea urbis episcopus, &c.

A succession of distinguished men might be named, who were educated, laboured, or lived a long time in those parts. It may suffice here to mention Origen, Eusebius, and Jerome, since the famous masters of the school of Antioch will readily occur to every reader.

But even here Gregory's thirst for knowledge could not be appeased; he left Cæsarea for the ancient seat of christian erudition,<sup>1</sup> where Clemens and Origen, and so many celebrated men, had once learnt and taught, and where now the episcopal chair was filled by one who was revered as the pillar of orthodoxy.<sup>2</sup> Undoubtedly, the brighter day of those sciences which Gregory chiefly wished to cultivate was gone by at Alexandria; still he could obtain there very easily a complete philosophical education. We possess no particular accounts respecting his residence and studies in this once splendid, but then decaying cosmopolis; but we venture to surmise, that his inclination to the Platonic philosophy, his partiality for Origen, and his almost unbounded reverence for Athanasius, dated their commencement from this period.

Gregory was carried on from one fountain of science to another; nor did he find any repose<sup>3</sup> till he came to

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 128, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Athanasius*. It cannot be positively decided whether or not Athanasius was actually present in Alexandria at the time of Gregory's residence there; nor whether Gregory's extraordinary reverence for him was grounded on a personal acquaintance with him. That might, however, not improbably have been the case. Athanasius certainly had returned to his native city about the year 350, and Gregory's stay at Alexandria may have been about that time, if not a year or two earlier.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Rebus suis*, l. 98, p. 33.

Μοῦνον ἐμοὶ φίλον ἔσκε λόγων κλέος, οὓς συνάγειραν  
'Αντολίη τε, θύσις τε, καὶ Ἑλλάδος εὐχος Ἀθῆναι.  
Ταῖς ἐπὶ πολλ' ἐμόγησα πολὺν χρόνον.

Athens, that place which has been consecrated by so many glorious recollections, the oldest source of all the higher branches of mental cultivation.<sup>1</sup> Even there, also, the brightest period of art and science had long since passed away. Yet Athens still, at least in proportion, maintained its ancient reputation, for scarcely could any one of the great cities (even the newly-founded, opulent Constantinople forming no exception) compete with her in regard to the ardent cultivation of science. Amidst profound degeneracy, and in most unfavourable circumstances (freedom, and even the sense of nationality, having been long lost), she still retained somewhat of the old, deep-rooted life and spirit of knowledge.

The active mind of Gregory, animated by an ardent zeal in pursuit of knowledge, had well nigh led to his early death on his voyage to Athens. He could not wait for the time of year favourable for the passage, but embarked in a vessel of Ægina during the stormy weather of autumn.<sup>2</sup> When they were now in sight of Cyprus, they encountered a fearful tempest; at the same time their supply of water failed, and thus several days were passed in the alternative of perishing by thirst, or by drowning. Amidst the common distress, Gregory suffered from a deep anxiety, not for his out-

---

<sup>1</sup> See Creuzer's *Oration, De civitate Athenarum, omnis Humanitatis Parente*. Lugd. Batav. 1809. Libanius aptly calls Athens 'the eye of Greece,' and adds: τὴν τῆς Ἀθηνᾶς πόλιν, τὴν μητέρα Πλάτωνος καὶ Δημοσθένους, καὶ τῆς ἄλλης τῆς πολυειδοῦς σοφίας.—*Επιταφ. ἐπὶ Ἰουλιαν.* p. 531. Reisk.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen i. de Rebus suis*, l. 310—340, p. 36. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, l. 120—212, pp. 3, 4. Detailed accounts of the storm he encountered occur in both these passages. Compare also *Orat.* xviii. 31, p. 351, where the whole is related with more brevity and simplicity.



ward life, but for the safety of his soul.<sup>1</sup> Although brought up on christian principles, he had not been baptized, but, after the custom of those days, had put off his baptism to a riper age. He was now afraid that he should die ere he had received the external rite of admission to Christianity, which he considered the necessary condition of eternal happiness. Overpowered with anguish, he threw himself down, with rent garments, weeping and praying, and gave such lively vent to his lamentations, that the ship's crew, threatened as they themselves were with immediate destruction, sympathised with him. With burning tears, he promised afresh to devote his whole life to God. They were saved:<sup>2</sup> some Phœnicians, on passing by, furnished the ship with water and provisions. The storm subsided, and they landed safely in the harbour of Ægina, from whence Gregory hastened to the long wished-for Athens.

This occurrence was now looked upon by Gregory as his second dedication to God's service.<sup>3</sup> Many persons

---

<sup>1</sup> See the just-quoted passages in Gregory's *Poems*, but especially *Orat.* xviii. 31, p. 352: Πάντων δὲ τὸν κοινὸν θάνατον δεδοικότων, ὁ τῆς ψυχῆς ἦν ἐμοὶ φοβερώτερος, ἐκινδύνεον γὰρ ἄθλιος ἀπελθεῖν καὶ ἀτέλεστος, ποθῶν τὸ πνευματικὸν ὕδωρ ἐν τοῖς φονικοῖς ὕδασι κ. τ. λ.

<sup>2</sup> The prayer, also, of his parents contributed (according to Gregory's belief) towards his delivery, they being made aware of his danger by a secret presentiment. Marvellous dreams, visions, and the like, (which Gregory often willingly, and even in this case, *Orat.* xviii. 31, p. 352, interweaves with the thread of his biography,) will be omitted in this work, as lying beyond the province of history, and because so much of a really historical character demands our closer attention.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 191, p. 4 :—

Σὸς, εἰπόν, εἰμι καὶ τὸ πρὶν καὶ νῦν ἔτι  
 Σὺ δῖς με λήψῃ, κτῆμα τῶν σοὶ τιμίων,  
 Γῆς καὶ θαλάσσης δῶρον ἐξηγνισμενον,  
 'Ευχῇ τε μητρὸς καὶ φόβοις ἐξαισιόις.

may take offence at the indispensable necessity of baptism for future happiness, here assigned as the cause of Gregory's deep distress; this is not the place to discuss the question: such, however, was the full conviction of that age, in which Gregory participated. We shall not, however, withhold our sympathy from the young man, who, at the prospect of immediate death, feared not so much the loss of life, as the harm which his soul might suffer. It is very remarkable to see, as we do here, the conviction of the indispensable necessity of baptism for future happiness existing together with the deliberate postponement of that rite. This phenomenon seems only to be accounted for by concluding, that the danger of dying unbaptized was considered as less than that of falling away from grace already attained, by reason of an unworthy life, or especial sins, after baptism, when a restoration to a state of acceptance was hardly to be expected.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### HIS RESIDENCE AS A STUDENT AT ATHENS.

ATHENS, as we have already remarked, was still, at that time, the most celebrated emporium of learning in Greece; in the animated cultivation of which, with a strange and eager impulse, not only the neighbouring regions of Greece, but even the more remote Asia, participated. Young men from all quarters, even from the distant Armenia, and other Asiatic provinces, flocked hither, and emulously crowded round the famous teachers of rhetoric and philosophy, who bore the name of

*Sophists*—a name which, at that period, had again attained some degree of honour. These philosophers and orators of the Athens of that day certainly had not the genius of a Socrates, a Plato, or a Demosthenes. They laboured, by artificial means, to preserve the forms of antiquity, whilst its noble simplicity, depth, and freedom, had long since departed from them. They strove, by means of a mystic idealism, to maintain a religion whose life and spirit had disappeared. They exerted themselves generally for external effect, and condescended to the use of magic and theurgic rites, (the favourite studies of that age,) and even to worse means, for the purpose of gaining influence over the youthful mind. Every sophist had his own school and party, who were devoted to him with incredible zeal; nor had they any higher aim than to spread their own fame with that of their master, and to increase the number of their partisans. There prevailed in most of the young students at Athens (as Gregory strikingly expresses it) a complete Sophistic furor.<sup>1</sup> They all canvassed for their master, since it was not the custom to attend different lecturers at the same time, but each one, as a rule, attached himself to one. The poorer students especially lent themselves to this business of recruiting, since they got exemption from class payment, or even some degree of remuneration, if they succeeded in bringing to their respective sophists a good supply of new-comers. An unprejudiced youth could scarcely set his foot upon Attic ground without being already claimed by the adherents of a party: they wrangled,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 15, p. 791: σοφιστομανοῦσιν Ἀθήνησι τῶν νέων οἱ πλεῖστοι καὶ ἀφρονέστεροι.

they struggled, they threw themselves around him; and it might easily happen that a young man was torn quite away from the very teacher whom he had come expressly to attend. The whole of Greece was drawn into this partisanship of the students for their favourite sophists; so that this recruiting (or *touting*) was carried on in the streets and harbours of other cities also. Nor were the literary disputes and altercations of the different schools, among themselves, less animated; indeed, they seldom concluded without coming to blows.<sup>1</sup> This perverted and wild excitement,<sup>2</sup> in which Gregory found himself, could by no means suit his noble mind. It was a comfort and refreshment to him that, not long after his arrival, his countryman, Basil, also arrived at Athens from Constantinople, to whom he now attached himself

---

<sup>1</sup> The vouchers for this description, besides Gregory's 45th *Oration*, (which, especially at § 15, p. 781, contains many interesting particulars,) are to be found chiefly in Libanius *de Vita sua*, p. 13, et seq., edit. Reisk; and in some of the letters of the same Sophist in Eunapius, *Vita Sophistar.* in *Proceres.*, pp. 130—133, or at pp. 74, 75, Boisson et Wytténb.; in Photius, in *Bibliothec. Cod.* 80, p. 189. The particulars relating hereto, collected by Wytténbach, in the *Bibliotheca Critica*, are very interesting. Vol. viii. part x. p. 86, et seq.; and also in his remarks on Eunapius, p. 351.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 14, p. 780: . . . 'Αθήνας τὰς χρυσᾶς ὄντως ἐμοί, καὶ τῶν καλῶν προξένους, εἰπέρ τινι' ἐκείναι γὰρ μοι τὸν ἄνδρα τοῦτον ἐγνώρισαν τελειώτερον, οὐδὲ πρὶν ἀγνοούμενον. A reputation for distinguished eloquence had already preceded the arrival of Basil, and, on the especial persuasion of Gregory, he was received by the other students with more consideration than was usually shown to new-comers; for the following practice, which Gregory relates (*Orat.* xliii. 16, p. 782) with a sort of agreeable circumstantiality, prevailed among the young men at Athens: 'On the arrival of a *freshman* (τὸς τῶν νέων) at Athens, one of that party which has gained him to themselves receives him as his guest; he is then bantered by every one after his pleasure, sometimes with refined, and sometimes with coarser wit, according



most affectionately. The connexion between Basil and Gregory, which heretofore had been merely acquaintance, now first became a hearty friendship, through a trifling incident, which, however, gives us a lively insight into the state of excitement then prevalent among the young men at Athens. The students seem to have been divided, not only according to their respective teachers in the schools, but also into certain fraternities,<sup>1</sup> formed of those who were natives of the same country. The respective parties had their leaders, who also acted as their champions in scientific contests. The fraternity of the Armenians is expressly named by Gregory as being particularly hostile to Basil, because he, though a new-comer, excelled many of them who had long been at Athens in eloquence. They entered into a contest

---

as he himself has been better or worse brought up. The pretence is, that they hereby take away a little of his self-conceit, and accustom him to the practice of obedience. With all this roughness, however, Gregory himself thought the custom not ill-meant, and certainly it constituted the actual admission to the privileges of companionship. In prosecution of their plan, the young men, two and two, in regular procession, go with the novice to one of the public baths; on their approaching the entrance of it, those in front all at once raise a wild cry, and command the procession to halt, as if admission had been refused them. They then throw themselves upon the doors, and in appearance force an entrance. All this is done merely to frighten the new-comer, for after they have gotten into the interior of the building, and the candidate for initiation has taken a bath, they then receive him in the most friendly manner, as one who is now their equal, and invested with all their privileges.' This mock ceremony, which shows us how academical customs, notwithstanding external variations, still continue essentially alike, was dispensed with in Basil's case; a very rare instance, as Gregory remarks. He himself, therefore, does not seem to have formed an exception to the rule.

<sup>1</sup> They are called *φράτριάι*, brotherhoods, in Gregory's poem, *de Vita sua*, l. 215, p. 4. The leaders of the procession are called *προστάται τοῦ χοροῦ*.

with him, and were on the point of being beaten by him, when Gregory, unsuspecting of their bad intentions, supported them, as the weaker side, and rendered the victory of Basil doubtful. In the course of the dispute, however, Gregory remarked the spiteful sentiments of the Armenians, and passed over immediately to the side of Basil, who now enjoyed a complete triumph. This slight circumstance made the two friends objects of most violent hatred to the Armenian fraternity, but bound them to each other so much the more closely.<sup>1</sup>

They studied together, especially in the schools of rhetoric, grammar, mathematics, and philosophy, as well theoretically as practically; music, also, as a means of attuning the soul to softer and purer sensations, was not neglected. Even of the science of medicine they endeavoured to acquire at least the philosophical part.<sup>2</sup> Their instructors were probably the celebrated sophists, Himerius and Proæresius.<sup>3</sup> By them principally they were led into those rich and flowery fields of ancient

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 17—20, p. 783—785. It is probable, also, that on this occasion the national jealousy between the Armenians and the Cappadocians exhibited itself.

<sup>2</sup> These subjects are at least enumerated by Gregory himself, *Orat.* xliii. 23, pp. 788, 789.

<sup>3</sup> This certainly, as far as I know, is nowhere expressly affirmed, but it may with great probability be concluded. Speaking of his instructors, Gregory says: *παρὰ τούτοις μὲν γὰρ οἱ ὑμέτεροι παιδεύονται, παρ' ὅσοις (ἡκούοντο) Ἀθηναῖαι.* *Orat.* xliii. 22, p. 787. The most famous Athenian sophists of that time were Himerius and Proæresius, whose lives, written by Eunapius (that of the former circumstantially, that of the latter only briefly), are, in general, sufficiently known. What high respect was enjoyed by Proæresius in his day appears, among other proofs, very strongly from an extremely flattering epistle addressed to him by Julian, *Epist.* 2, p. 373. The Romans, also, to whom he was sent by Constantius, erected a statue in honour of him, with this inscription:

Greek literature, a more intimate acquaintance with which displays itself in all the writings of Gregory.

How seducingly must heathenism have often presented itself to them, clothed as it was in the attractive garb of poetry and philosophy. Before them stood respected masters, who recommended the old religion with all the insinuating art of rhetoric, and their myths by the philosophical mysticism with which they expounded them, and sought to soften what was offensive in them by means of allegories. Around them, on the heights and in the valleys, stood the serene and noble temples of the gods of antiquity; and whichever way they looked, the gods themselves presented themselves in agreeable and attractive, or in grave and venerable forms. In truth, Athens was still, at that time, the most attractive seat of heathenism in Greece; nowhere else had it so many friends, so many weighty and influential panegyrists. It was no easy matter, under these circumstances, to continue a true Christian; indeed, many christian youths were here won over to the old faith.<sup>1</sup>

---

Regina Rerum Roma Regi Eloquentiæ. Eunap. *in Proæresio*, p. 157, or 90, Wytttenb. et Boissonade, and the notes thereon at pp., 322, 382. Respecting Proæresius, the reader may also compare Sozom. *Ecc. Hist.*, vi. 17. Gregory probably had also attended the lectures of the first sophist of the time, Libanius,—at least Socrates says so, who elsewhere mentions Himerius and Proæresius as his masters. Socrat. *Ecc. Hist.*, iv. 26. The assertions, however, of Socrates concerning Gregory do not bear the characteristic of entire credibility. During his rather long residence at Athens Gregory might have attended several sophists in succession.

<sup>1</sup> Orat. xliii. 21, p. 787: βλαβεραὶ μὲν τοῖς ἄλλοις Ἀθῆναι, τὰ εἰς ψυχὴν, οὐ γὰρ φαύλως τοῦτο ὑπολαμβάνεται τοῖς ἐυσεβέστεροις· καὶ γὰρ πλουτοῦσι τὸν κακὸν πλοῦτον, εἰδῶλα, μᾶλλον τῆς ἄλλης Ἑλλάδος, καὶ χαλεπὸν μὴ συναρπασθῆναι τοῖς τούτων ἐπαινέταις καὶ συνηγόροις.

Gregory and Basil stood firm; the christian faith had been too deeply impressed upon them at home; nor was the glitter of poetry or philosophy able to efface the strong impressions of a strict christian education. It was their pride, in the midst of heathen-minded Athens, to be and to be called Christians.<sup>1</sup> They continued even here in constant external communion with the Church. In their simple mode of life they had only two sources of refreshment—viz., in attending their teachers, and (what was still dearer to them) the services of the Church. They strictly avoided the feasts and banquets of the other young men, and the theatre, where heathenism might be presented to them in a more seductive form. Thus their faith not only maintained itself untarnished, but was strengthened still more by the temptations which it resisted.

Basil had, at first, been dissatisfied with Athens.<sup>2</sup> Gregory calmed his mind by showing him the right view to take of the things which pressed upon him; this, and the other circumstance already mentioned, helped to form a closer union between them, which soon became so intimate, that they planned their entire mode of life in unison: they lodged, they took their meals, they studied philosophy together.<sup>3</sup> But it was not so much the intercourse of the outward as of the inner life, which bound them permanently to each other; their connexion was founded upon their common love of God

---

<sup>1</sup> See in the above-quoted places : ἡμῖν δὲ τὸ μέγα πρᾶγμα καὶ ὄνομα, Χριστιανὸς εἶναι καὶ ὀνομάζεσθαι.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 18, p. 784 : κενὴν μακαρίαν τὰς Ἀθῆνας ὠνόμαζεν.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 19, p. 785 : . . . τηνικαῦτα ἤδη τὰ πάντα ἡμεν ἀλλήλοις, ὁμόστέγοι, ὁμοδίαιτοι, συμφύεῖς, τὸ ἐν βλέποντες.



and of the Redeemer, upon their common efforts after a godly life; reposing on this everlasting foundation, it defied the storms of the time, and the chilling, deadening incongruities of society. Had it been only a human friendship, it might well have been disturbed, but as being at the same time a heavenly one, it could not be destroyed. Even as an old man, and after all that passed between him and his friend Basil, Gregory speaks of this friendship of his youth with youthful ardour:<sup>1</sup> ‘How,’ (says he, in his eulogy upon Basil,) ‘how can I think of this friendship without tears? A like hope stimulated both of us in the pursuit of an object, which is generally wont to excite the most violent jealousy—literary distinction. But envy was far from our hearts, while they were filled with a generous emulation. There was a friendly contest between us, not who should carry off the first prize, but which should be allowed to adjudge it to the other, since each cherished the reputation of his friend as if it were his own. We seemed, in fact, to be only *one soul* that animated *two bodies*.’<sup>2</sup> It is in such striking terms as the following that Gregory shows how their friendship, originating as it did from love for the Eternal, must necessarily be indestructible:<sup>3</sup> ‘Mere human love, as it relates only to transitory things, must, in like manner, be transient, like the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 20, pp. 785, 786.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 229, p. 4 :

Τὰ πάντα μὲν δὴ κοινὰ, καὶ ψυχὴ μία,

Δνοῖν δέουσα σωμάτων διάστασιν.

“Ὁ δ’ εἰς ἐν ἡμᾶς διαφερόντως ἤγαγε,

Τοῦτ’ ἦν, θεός τε καὶ πόθος τῶν κρείσσονων.

In the like spirit Cicero says: *Amicitiae vis est in eo, ut unus quasi animus fiat ex pluribus.*—*De Amicit.* cap. xxv.

*Orat.* xliii. 19, p. 785.

flowers of spring. As the flame glows no longer when the fuel is consumed, but is extinguished with it, so a merely physical fondness cannot maintain itself when its appropriate nourishment is burnt up. But a divine and pure affection, because it relates to untransitory things, is, for that reason, durable; and the farther it proceeds in the contemplation of true happiness, the stronger it binds, and the closer it connects with each other the lovers of the eternal; that is the law of heavenly love. I am well aware how my feelings have carried me away beyond all limits, and without regard to time; nor do I myself know how I came to use these words, but I cannot refrain from giving them expression.'

Would we fully understand the affectionate terms on which these two great men lived, we must especially consult their correspondence. But, as many separate points will have to be discussed hereafter, I shall now quote only two passages, which beautifully exhibit the overflowing affection of Gregory for Basil:—'I have taken you,' he writes to his friend,<sup>1</sup> 'as the guide of my life and the teacher of my faith, and whatever else can be called beautiful and great. As such I always consider you; and whenever any one celebrates your praises, he does it either in company with me or in unison with my sentiments, so entirely am I enchained by your mild wisdom, so entirely, in the purity of a devoted heart, am I yours. And no wonder, since the longer the acquaintance, the greater the experience; and the more complete the experience, the more valuable the testimony that one friend can give of another. If there be anything which gives a value to my life, it is your

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 26; (*al.* 20,) p. 788.

society, your friendship.' Another letter of Gregory's, of a more playful character (in which also the happy reminiscences of Athens are particularly renewed), concludes with these words:—'Who has ever admired anything upon earth as I have admired you? There is but one spring in the year's cycle, one sun among the stars, one heaven, which embraces all; so, also, if I have any judgment in such things, and if (which I do not believe) that judgment is not blinded by love, there is only one voice, among all, worth listening to, and that voice is yours.' The friendship between Gregory and Basil was the more intense, because, amidst their perfect agreement on the highest principles of religion and morals, it was animated by the difference of their intellectual individuality. Basil was more ardent and more inclined to a life of action, Gregory more calm and contemplative. Thus the one was able to guard the other from going too far in his particular direction, and both could thus, in some measure, complete what was wanting in themselves.

At Athens, Gregory formed an acquaintance (of a very remarkable character, and one which subsequently gave him no pleasure) with the nephew\* of the Emperor Constantius, the prince *Julian*, who afterwards succeeded to the throne, and played a short but extraordinary part in the drama of the world's history.<sup>1</sup> This prince was

---

\* Ullmann here (and even Neander, in his *Eccles. Hist.*) speaks of Julian as the *nephew*, instead of *cousin* to Constantius, as Gibbon and Warburton describe him. Julian's father, called Julius Constantius, was brother to Constantine, and uncle to Constantius the Emperor, who, being Constantine's son, was therefore Julian's cousin.—*Translator*.

Libanius gives more detailed information concerning Julian's mode of life at Athens. 'Επιτάφ. ἐπὶ Ἰουλιανῷ, p. 532, Reisk.

then (A.D. 355) resident there, by the permission of his jealous uncle, for the purpose of pursuing his studies. A singular predilection for paganism and pagan mysteries, which flourished particularly in that city, already displayed itself in Julian. He was as strongly attached to the rhetorical and philosophical advocates of heathenism, as they in their turn (as well as all the admirers of the old religion) directed their attention, with hopeful expectation, to the young and distinguished member of the imperial family; Gregory, therefore, who acknowledges that he by no means possessed a quick-sightedness in discerning character, had yet no difficulty in anticipating the very worst in Julian. He calls upon those who were with him at that time at Athens to testify, that soon after he had become acquainted with Julian, he had uttered those words—‘How great an evil is the Roman empire here training up!’<sup>1</sup> What it was which caused Gregory to judge so severely of the young man,<sup>2</sup> he has himself informed us, in a perhaps somewhat exaggerated picture of Julian’s demeanour and external appearance: ‘I was led to become a prophet,’ he says, ‘by the restlessness of his behaviour, and the extravagant tone of his animation. It also appeared to me no good sign, that his neck was not firmly set on his shoulders; that those shoulders often moved convulsively; that his eye frequently glanced round timidly, and rolled as if in frenzy; and that his feet were never in a state of repose. As little was I pleased with his nose, which breathed pride and contempt; with the ridiculous distortions of his face, which yet indicated the same pride; his loud, immoderate laughter; the nodding

---

<sup>1</sup> Οἷον κακὸν ἢ Ῥωμαίων τρέφει. <sup>2</sup> *Orat.* v. 23, 24, pp. 161, 162.



and shaking of his head without any reason; his hesitating speech, interrupted by the act of breathing; his abrupt, unmeaning questions, and his answers not at all better, but often self-contradictory, and given without any scientific arrangement.'<sup>1</sup> If we deduct the effect of a strong personal dislike upon the pen of this delineator, we have still remaining the picture of a restless, fiery-tempered man, of a mind incessantly active and excited; of one who was haughty in the conscious feeling of power, but yet externally practising dissimulation,<sup>2</sup> while there was wanting to his great natural abilities

---

<sup>1</sup> It is not uninteresting to compare with the above what Julian himself tells us of his own external appearance. He evidently tried much, especially as Emperor, to keep up a peculiar exhibition of himself, and was fond of uniting the unpolished severity of a Cynic with the dignified bearing of an ancient hero. With self-satisfied complacency he speaks (in his *Misopogon*, p. 338, seq.) of his bristly hair, his manly breast, and his long, shaggy beard, while he still censures Nature for not having given him a handsomer countenance. Nay, he does not hesitate to speak in terms of commendation of his ink-stained hands, his long nails, and even of the minute inhabitants which dwelt in the wilderness of his beard! Ammianus Marcellinus (xxv. 4) gives a much more agreeable description of him than he does of himself. 'Mediocris erat staturæ, capillis, tanquam pexisset, mollibus, hirsuta barba in acutum desinente vestitus, venustate oculorum micantium flagrans, qui mentis ejus angustias indicabant, superciliis decoris et naso rectissimo, ore paullo majore, labro inferiore demisso, opima et incurva cervice, humeris vastis et latis, ab ipso capite usque unguium summitates lineamentorum recta compage, unde viribus valebat et cursu.' In another passage, Ammianus mentions some peculiarities which agree better with Gregory's description: 'Levioris ingenii, . . . . linguæ fusioris et admodum raro silentis.'

<sup>2</sup> That Julian had early practised the art of dissimulation, and whilst he was entirely inclined to heathenism had yet externally played the Christian, is not merely the expression of hostile suspicion on the part of Christian writers (see Gregory's *Orat.* iv. 30, pp. 90, 91), but is also expressly allowed by heathen writers (see Ammian. Marcellin., xxi. ii.) Compare with lib. xxii. cap. 5. Libanius, also Julian's eulogist and friend, does not deny the

that judicious education which would have regulated and directed them to the right object.

The residence of Basil and Gregory at Athens appears to have been of great length; indeed, the period of academical study was at that time generally much longer than it is now-a-days. Gregory arrived at Athens just in the bloom of youth, and left it when he was about thirty years old.<sup>1</sup> A residence of such a length rendered Athens very dear to most students, and the departure from it uncommonly difficult.<sup>2</sup> The separation was made especially difficult to the two friends from the earnestness with which both teachers and fellow-students wished positively to retain them at Athens. Gregory, indeed, in spite of all his efforts, was forced to remain, whilst Basil, who had more urgent motives for a speedy departure, returned to his own country. It seems to have been the wish of those who detained Gregory, to induce him to come forward in the character of a teacher of rhetoric in Athens.<sup>3</sup> This occupation, however,

---

truth of the representation, but only endeavours to excuse it by a poor attempt at wit: Αἰσωπος δ' ἐνταῦθα μῦθον ἂν ἐποίησεν, οὐκ ὄνον λεοντῇ κρύπτων, ἀλλ' ὄνον δορᾷ τὸν λέοντα· κάκεινος ἦδει μὲν, ἅ εἰδέναι κρεῖττον, ἐδόκει δὲ τὰ ἀσφαλέστερα. *Επιτάφ. ἐπὶ Ιουλιαν.*—p. 528, Reisk.

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 112, 239, pp. 2, 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 242, p. 4 et seq. *Orat.* xliii. 24, p. 789. Οὐδέν γὰρ οὕτως οὐδενὶ λυπηρόν, ὥς τοῖς ἐκείσε συννόμοις, Ἀθηναίων καὶ ἀλλήλων τέμνεσθαι.

<sup>3</sup> Most of the biographers of Gregory (on the assertion of the Presbyter Gregory, who says—Γρηγόριος δὲ ἀπριζ κατείχετο τοῖς Ἀθηναίων φοιτηταῖς, μήτε τὴν ἔξοδον αὐτῷ συγχωροῦσι καὶ παιδεύειν αὐτοὺς ἐκλιπαροῦσι, τὸν τε σοφιστικὸν θρόνον παρακαλοῦσι δέχεσθαι) explicitly assume, that the fellow-students of Gregory detained him solely that he might take possession of the Sophistic chair. But he himself does not express himself on this point with sufficient clearness for such a positive conclusion. He says (in his *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 256) :

Ὡς δὴ λόγων δώσοντες ἐκ ψήφου κράτος.

could not have suited the mind of Gregory, since scarcely had Basil taken his departure, when we see Gregory also following his friend's example. He set out upon his homeward journey by way of Constantinople, where, without any previous concert, he fell in with his brother Cæsarius, who had just arrived from Alexandria (where he had for some years been studying), on his return to his paternal home.<sup>1</sup> Cæsarius had devoted himself to the study of natural philosophy and medicine, and appears at that time to have obtained a distinguished reputation, since the most advantageous offers were made to him if he would remain at Constantinople. But brotherly and filial affection prevailed in the heart of Cæsarius over all these attractive prospects; he could not resolve to let his brother return alone to his parents' home. Their aged mother, Nonna, had often wished and earnestly asked of God in prayer, that her sons might again set foot together on the paternal threshold. This her wish was now fulfilled. They both returned to the arms of their parents in good condition, and well furnished for the business of life.

In the course of Gregory's education, thus far related, we find the germs already set of all that was afterwards developed in him. In company with superior abilities, he had by nature a serious disposition; a strict and religious education drew him off still more from the external to the internal world; he learnt from childhood to consider himself as consecrated to the service of God, and to regard knowledge as a mean for that object. All the places of instruction which he visited stimulated him to the study of eloquence. His residence at

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 5, 6, 7, 8, pp. 201—204.

Alexandria infused into him an inclination to the Platonic philosophy, a partiality for Origen, and the theology and exegesis of that school; a reverence for Athanasius and his dogmatic principles. At Athens he became still more familiar with Greek literature, and more skilful in the logic and rhetoric of the day. His aversion, however, to heathenism and its glitter grew stronger—his love for simple, genuine Christianity more firmly fixed. Here, also, was already formed his devoted friendship with Basil, and the foundation laid for his dislike of Julian; two things which had an extraordinary influence on his whole life.



## SECTION THE SECOND.

HIS MODE OF LIFE IN CAPPADOCIA, PARTLY IN SOLITUDE, PARTLY IN PUBLIC ECCLESIASTICAL EMPLOYMENT, ABOUT A.D. 360—379, AND, THEREFORE, FROM HIS THIRTIETH YEAR TO HIS FORTY-NINTH.

**CHRONOLOGICAL SURVEY:**—The beginning of this section falls still in the reign of Constantius, who soon, however, departed from the stage of life. Exactly at the time when Gregory returned home from Athens (A.D. 360), Julian was proclaimed Augustus, or partner in the throne, by the Gallic legions at Paris. In November of the year 361, Constantius died, and Julian ascended the imperial throne. At the same time, probably at Christmas, 361, Gregory was ordained priest by his father. After Julian, in 363, had found an early death in the Persian war, the succession of christian emperors was not again interrupted. Jovian, who leaned to the Athanasian side, but at the same time tolerated all parties, reigned only seven months. He was succeeded in 364 by Valentinian, who associated with him his brother Valens in the government. In the West, Valentinian, tolerant or indifferent, yet gave the victory to the orthodox or Homoeousian party; Valens, in the East, favoured the Arians, and persecuted their opponents. The Nicene creed had however, meanwhile, powerful champions. In the West, Damasus (bishop of Rome since 366), Ambrose (bishop of Milan since 374); in the East, for a long time, Athanasius (from A.D. 373), and after him Peter, his successor in the see

of Alexandria; we may add, especially, Basil (bishop of Cæsarea, in Cappadocia, since 370), his brother Gregory of Nyssa, and our Gregory of Nazianzum. Valentinian was made emperor in the year 375; Valens in 378. The former was succeeded by his sons, Gratian and Valentinian II., who, after the death of Valens, associated Theodosius with themselves (A.D. 379) in the government.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### DIFFERENCE IN THE TURN OF MIND IN GREGORY AND HIS BROTHER, CÆSARIUS.

THE two brothers were gifted by Nature with very different intellectual talents; but now, from deliberate and spontaneous judgment, their courses of life diverged still more widely from each other. Both of them were alike endowed with superior abilities, and with a lively, quick apprehension; both of them had been accustomed, by the education they had received in their early years, to an unwearied activity in the pursuit of knowledge. Gregory, however, was, from a child, more inclined to seriousness, to self-denial, to retirement from worldly things; Cæsarius developed more into the man of the world, yet without renouncing the pious principles which he had received in the paternal mansion. The former devoted himself, with all his thoughts and aspirations, to the unseen world, and became a theologian; the other to the world of sense, and became a natural philosopher and a physician. Piety had been implanted by education in the souls of the two brothers as the basis of their entire existence; but this fundamental principle operated

and expressed itself in the two very differently. To Cæsarius it served as a light, now clearer and now more dimly burning, through the very intricate paths of a life, sometimes favoured by fortune, and sometimes, also, shaken by unhappy accidents. In Gregory, it became a consuming fire, which shone through his whole life, and already, in his early days, destroyed within him, if not everything, yet almost everything, that leads us to take pleasure in the joys and gratifications of the world. Cæsarius was inclined to an active life, and undertook a variety of offices. Gregory had an invincible and only too-predominant inclination to a solitary, contemplative life; it was with an effort that he could bring himself to engage even in ecclesiastical employments; his eye seemed ever glancing onwards to the quiet contemplation of heavenly things.

Cæsarius had devoted but a short time to his parents and his father-land, when those dazzling promises and prospects again allured him to Constantinople. Conceivable as this is in a young man, who, being furnished with the stores of a scientific and refined education, wished not to be buried in an obscure little provincial town, but to enter at once upon a more distinguished career, yet this step was not entirely approved of by his family, especially by his brother. He was apprehensive that the virtue and piety of Cæsarius might totter on the slippery footing of a court-life. The promised splendour did not dazzle the youthful Gregory, for he considered it a greater honour 'to be the last and least with God, than to be the first and greatest with an earthly king.' He perceived, also, that this proceeding on the part of his brother (although he himself declared his chief motive for his future residence at court was the

fair prospect of being able from thence to work the more advantageously for his native country) was not free from the charge of ambition.<sup>1</sup> Gregory, however, is so considerate as not to blame his brother strongly on account of this step. Cæsarius had scarcely arrived at Constantinople, and had given some small proof of his medical knowledge, when the Emperor Constantius (whose distrustful, suspicious character was not often wont to promote suddenly to great honour one who was yet unknown) took him into the number of his court physicians,<sup>2</sup> and treated him with especial regard. His pleasing manners made him a favourite with the Emperor and the great men of the palace; but all this good fortune could not destroy the deep impressions of a pious education upon his mind. Even here, at court, it was the pride of Cæsarius, not only to bear the name of a Christian, but also to deserve that title in deed. And, what is particularly pleasing, Gregory extols most

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 9, pp. 203, 204. Μετὰ τοῦτο δόξης ἐπιθυμία, καὶ τοῦ προστατεύειν τῆς πόλεως, ὡς ἐμέ γε συνεπέθεν, τοῖς βασιλείοις δίδωσιν, οὐ πάνυ μὲν ἡμῖν φίλα ποιοῦντα, καὶ κατὰ γνώμην, κ. τ. λ.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* vii. 10, p. 204. Τάττεται μὲν γὰρ τὴν πρώτην ἐν ἰατροῖς τάξιν,—κἄν τοῖς φίλοις τοῦ βασιλέως εὐθὺς ἀριζμούμενος, τὰς μεγίστας καρποῦται τιμὰς. This was no slight distinction in the court of Constantius, for that emperor was extremely distrustful and cautious respecting those whom he admitted to his society. Ammianus Marcellin., xxi. 16. (Constantius) *examinator meritorum nonnumquam subscruposus, palatinas dignitates velut ex quodam tribuens perpendiculo, et sub eo nemo celsum aliquid in regia repentinus adhibitus est vel incognitus.* This ‘nemo’ of Ammianus might almost make us doubt respecting Gregory’s account; but it is probably not to be taken so strictly, that one or two exceptions might not have occurred. Besides this, the appointment which Cæsarius obtained at first, probably was not such as to be reckoned among the offices and dignities which Ammianus had expressly in his thoughts.



of all that quality in his brother, which formed the great feature in the character of their father, and one which, under such circumstances, is so seldom wont to be kept inviolate—viz., high and unaffected simplicity.<sup>1</sup>

Whilst his brother was thus making his first entrance into society, Gregory was already feeling an inclination to withdraw from it. His thirst for knowledge had been only partially satisfied, and served only to awaken within him a longing of a higher kind. His predilection for quiet contemplation developed itself with stronger force; and if it cannot be denied that Gregory yielded too much to his bias for a contemplative, solitary life, we must not, on the other hand, overlook the fact, that there are men of contemplative natures, who (whether they wish it or not) are continually drawn away to the abstracted contemplation of supersensual things by a sort of intellectual instinct; just as others, by an equally powerful impulse, are carried into active life, and involved in its busy transactions. This contemplative inclination (which, however, is the special gift of only a few individuals) must be allowed to have its peculiar value, provided it does not claim for itself a higher degree of piety, nor exalt its own manner and practice as the common law for many. In this sense we consider the bias for a life of solitude, which often took an irresistible possession of Gregory's mind, by no means so objectionable as it may appear to many.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 10, pp. 204, 205. . . . . ὥς μηδὲν εἶναι καὶ τὴν Κράτητος ἀπλότητα πρὸς τὴν ἐκείνου θεωρουμένην.

## CHAPTER II.

GREGORY SKETCHES FOR HIMSELF HIS PLAN OF LIFE.

ON returning home to his parents, Gregory was expected to engage himself in the duties of civil life. The highly-educated young man was required to exhibit proofs of his proficiency in eloquence, to come forward as a teacher of that art, or even to enter upon the profession of a public advocate.<sup>1</sup> Gregory certainly complied so far as to speak several times before an audience;<sup>2</sup> but he could not bring his mind to follow the regular calling of a sophist, or a legal advocate. His thoughts were turned to another object, to the pursuit of which he now solemnly bound himself afresh by means of the baptismal vow.

The ancient writer of Gregory's life<sup>3</sup> places his

---

<sup>1</sup> Socrates, *Eccles. Hist.* iv. 26. Even if we had not the somewhat ambiguous testimony of Socrates, it were in itself probable that he did so, since it was the usual path pursued by young men who had cultivated the study of oratory.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 25, p. 790. *Carmen de Vit. sua*, l. 265, p. 5 :

ἦλθον, λόγους ἔδειξα, τὴν τινῶν νόσον (Qu. πόθον, *Trans.*)

Ἐπλησ' ἀπαιτούντων με τοῦθ' ὥς τι χρέος.

<sup>3</sup> Gregory, *Presbyter*; immediately after relating the return of our Gregory to his father's house, he adds: καὶ πρῶτον μὲν τὸ θεῖον λαμβάνει βάπτισμα ὃ καὶ πρόην τῇ δυνάμει πεφωτισμένος. In the writings of Gregory himself, I find no very clear traces of his baptism having taken place at this time; and we might well wonder that he, having once been saved from the danger of a storm at sea, should not at once have been baptized, and not again (and that through a space of about ten years) be exposed to the possibility of dying unbaptized. It seems however, that he intentionally postponed the rite of baptism to that epoch in his life when, agreeably to his wishes, he should have decided upon that course of solitary contemplation, in which, whilst following the bias of his own mind, he might devote himself exclusively to God's service.

baptism at this period; and though other accounts, generally more definite, here fail us, we have yet no sufficient grounds for doubting this assertion. It is rather probable that Gregory was particularly induced by this holy transaction (which, to him, was so weighty) to give from thenceforth a still more earnest and strict direction to his life. Indeed, we find in the case of several other Fathers, that they commenced a new section of their life with their baptism; and from that point they placed more definitely before their eyes, and followed more steadily, the end and object of their exertions. Besides making a solemn vow at his baptism *never to swear*,<sup>1</sup> he formed anew the pious resolve to consecrate all of art and science which he possessed, all the energies of his life and soul, only and solely to God, and the spreading of Christ's kingdom. His gift of eloquence should serve no interests but those of God and the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vit. sua*, l. 1102, p. 18:

καὶ γὰρ εἰμ' ἀνώμωτος,  
Ἐξ οὗ λέλουμαι πνεύματος χαρίσματι.

Gregory, Presbyter, does not omit the mention of this circumstance. Undoubtedly we find in the writings of Gregory himself several solemn, oath-like protestations (for instance, *Orat.* xxvi. 1, p. 471); but it seems that these ought to be considered rather as expressions of high oratorical fervour, than as oaths in the proper sense of the word. Gregory very clearly expresses the principle, that he looked upon an oath as something particularly forbidden by Christ.—*Orat.* iv. 123, p. 146. In common, therefore, with the most distinguished Fathers of the earlier centuries and of his own time, he renounced oaths, as unbecoming to a Christian. See Stäudlin's *History of the Various Notions and Doctrines respecting Oaths*, Göttenb. 1824, p. 72 et seq. Concerning the grounds of this conviction, he does not very clearly explain himself; but he doubtless believed that Christ has wholly forbidden an oath, and that a Christian should be so thoroughly truthful, that in his case there could be no need of an oath. Probably the same consideration influenced Gregory also, which we find expressed by his friend Basil—that he who swears not runs no danger of swearing

truth. 'These,' (says he, very beautifully, of his orations<sup>1</sup> and his oratory,) 'these I consecrate to Him, even all that is left to me, and in which alone I am rich. Everything else I have relinquished, at the command of the Spirit, in order to get possession of the pearl of price, and to be the merchant who barter the small and the perishable for the great and everlasting. But *the Word*, and the art of preaching it, I still hold fast, as a *minister of the Word*; and this possession I will never deliberately neglect. And as I set little value on all earthly delights, so, after God, all my love is confined to this, or rather, to Him alone; for the spoken word

---

falsely. At least, the following passage, *Orat.* iv. 123, p. 146, seems to indicate this: ἐπίορκον δὲ (χωρῆσαι ἢ) ὁμόσαι οὕτω δεινὸν καὶ ὑπέρογκον, ὥστε καὶ τὸν ὅρκον μόνον ἡμῖν τυγχάνειν ἀπώ-  
μοτον. Some remarkable expressions concerning an oath occur in Gregory's 219th letter to Theodorus, p. 908, where he explains that a written obligation, even without imprecations in case of failure, is as binding as a verbal oath; and at the same time he thus exhibits his notion of an oath: παίζουσιν οἱ πολλοὶ ἑαυτοὺς κατὰ τὸν ἑμὸν λογόν; Τοὺς μὲν κατὰ τῶν ἀρῶν προκειμένους, ὅρκους νομίζοντες, τοὺς ἐγγράφους δὲ δίχα ἀναθεμάτων (for so probably must the unmeaning δίχα τῶν θερμάτων be read) ἀφο-  
σιωσιν, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὅρκον ὑπολαμβάνοντες· πᾶν γὰρ τὸ μὲν τῶν χρεῶν χειρόγραφον δεσμεῖν πλέον τῆς ἀπλῆς ὁμολογίας· τὸν δὲ ἐγγεγραμμένον ὅρκον, ἄλλο τι ἢ ὅρκον ὑποληψόμεθα; καὶ συν-  
τόμως εἰπεῖν, ὅρκος ἡμῖν ἐστίν ἢ τοῦ ἐπερωτησαντος καὶ πεισ-  
θέντος πληροφορία. Gregory here, I think, intends to say: 'a written obligation is more binding than a merely oral promise, and comes more nearly, if not exactly, to the force of an oath, even though no ἀραὶ καὶ ἀναθέματα (no prayers and offerings) may be associated with it; it should therefore be looked upon as sacred as a solemnly uttered oath; since an oath is, generally speaking, nothing else than that which conveys full certainty and conviction to inquirers and believers.' In this connexion, therefore, Gregory might also say, that Christians should not swear at all, because their simple affirmation (as that of men who are perfectly lovers of truth and worthy of credit) must already possess the highest degree of certainty which any one can require.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vi. 5, p. 181.



exalts the soul to God by a sort of insight; through it alone is God rightly apprehended, the knowledge of him preserved, and made to grow in us.’<sup>1</sup>

When Gregory, having in this manner renounced what had hitherto maintained so strong a hold upon him, had resolutely devoted himself entirely to God’s service, his only doubt was, how he should immediately order his mode of life, so as to attain this object most surely. To give up the enjoyment of the world was his decided purpose; but two ways of doing this presented themselves to him. Should he entirely withdraw himself from the world,—at least for a time,—as many holy men of old had done, as Elijah, John, and others? Or should he, whilst still living in the society of the world, contend in his own person, and by his influence upon others, against all that is properly called worldly? By adopting the former plan, that of entire withdrawal from society, a man might (he thought<sup>2</sup>) live for himself, and his own sanctity, amid the calm contemplation of heavenly things; but, in doing this, he is not beneficial to the common weal; he is as good as dead for others. On the other hand, if he remain in the intercourse of society, he may certainly devote himself to the interests

---

<sup>1</sup> . . . ὃ δὴ καὶ μόνῳ Θεῷ καταλαμβάνεται γνησίως, καὶ τηρεῖται, καὶ ἐν ἡμῖν αὖξεται—*i. e.*, the word preached from the source of true knowledge is the only means of bringing the Deity home to us with a clear consciousness, of preserving to us that knowledge in its purity, and of promoting its growth within us. How cheering is it, at an epoch when the externals of religious service had already begun to be obtruded so strongly upon the Church, to hear so powerful a judgment in favour of the exclusive value of *the Word*, the living, spoken word, as the truest expression of the Spirit, and as the most effective means of stirring the mind and soul of the hearers!

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vit. sua*, l. 280—311, p. 5.

of others; but he himself cannot be said to live while his mind is in perpetual unrest. In this way the advantages and the disadvantages of both modes of life presented themselves before him. He wished to unite the good, to avoid the evil of both; though, were he wholly to follow his inclination, a secret bias of his nature would have invited him to the stillness of a solitary life.<sup>1</sup> He continued, therefore, for the present, in his previous relations of life; and so much the more, because here the application and study of the Holy Scriptures<sup>2</sup> was more at his command, and also (what with him was a consideration of especial weight) because by remaining at home he could promote the comfort and happiness of his aged parents, and serve as a support to his no longer active father in the discharge of his ecclesiastical duties.<sup>3</sup> Gregory, however, lived at the same time by the strict rule of a solitary ascetic: everything that could only be called indulgent, harmless gratification, if it flattered the senses ever so remotely, seemed to him objectionable. He went so far as even to shun music, as something that gratifies the senses.<sup>4</sup> His food consisted of bread and salt; his drink, water; his bed, the bare ground; his clothing, of coarse and rough

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory, although more inclined to a contemplative life, was yet far from ignoring the value of a practical, active one, or denying that the majority of men are destined for the latter. His feeling was, that on this point every one should choose according to his original inclination. *Tetrastichon*, i. p. 156.

Πράξιν προτιμήσειας, ἢ θεωρίαν;

\*Οψις τελείων ἔργων, ἢ δε πλειόνων.

\*Ἀμφω μὲν εἰσι δέξιαί τε καὶ φίλαι.

Σὺ δὲ πρὸς ἡν πεφυκας, ἐκτίνου πλέον.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, l. 296, p. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, l. 311—320, pp. 5, 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Carm.*, l. 70, p. 32:

Οὐ μούσης ἀταλοῖς ἐνὶ κρούμασι θυμὸν ἰάνθην.

materials.<sup>1</sup> Incessant labour filled up the day; prayers, hymns, and holy meditations, a great portion of the night. His early life, which had been anything but thoughtless, though not so very strict, now seemed to him objectionable; his former laughter now cost him many tears. Silence and calm reflection were become his law and delight. In a word, Gregory now, with all the ardour of youth, plunged into an asceticism which assuredly Christianity (whose object is not bodily mortification, but the spiritual sacrifice of the temper and affections) does not require; it was, however, a practice which in those times, even to the best-disposed, could appear all but essential, and, in Gregory's case at least, did not degenerate into a self-satisfied affectation of sanctity. When Gregory, also, in this relation, speaks of renouncing worldly property, it is perhaps to be understood to mean only, that he gave largely to the poor, and generally, that he abstracted his soul more and more from the enjoyment of earthly goods. An actual renunciation, or giving away of property, (as we find in the case of Antonius and others,) we cannot think of here, because Gregory was not yet in possession of his property; and also because, even after the death of his parents, we recognise him, from several circumstances, (and even from his apparently genuine will and testament,) as a man of wealth.

One principal motive which withheld Gregory from a life of total solitude arose, as it has been remarked, from his child-like, pious affection for his parents.<sup>2</sup> He was

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm.* i. l. 75, p. 32; and *Carm.* liv. l. 153—175. In this poem he especially recommends silence, in connexion with solemn meditations, as a profitable exercise.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Rebus suis*, l. 135—141, p. 33.

desirous of assisting his father, and was now obliged to do so in relation to his domestic affairs. He found it, however, the source of endless annoyances. No man was ever less adapted than he to manage a household, to keep rude servants in order, to administer a not insignificant property, and, in case of necessity, to conduct a lawsuit with requisite consideration and dexterity. Willingly would he have given all his property to the poor rather than stand for whole days before the tribunals, or listen to the clamour of the broker, the official collector, and the like sort of persons. He complains bitterly of these things;<sup>1</sup> and his soul, which would gladly have taken its flight to a higher atmosphere, was often thereby so disagreeably brought down to earth, that it was difficult for him to keep himself in that calm, gentle, and especially that *humble*, resigned spirit, which alone he acknowledged to be becoming in a Christian.

---

### CHAPTER III.

#### GREGORY IN SOLITARY LIFE.

IN this manner, a more earnest longing for complete retirement from the world must have been produced in the soul of Gregory. Even while he was at Athens, a life of solitary asceticism had been his highest wish, and he had promised his friend Basil to retire with him into some quiet resting-place. That friend having conceived

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Rebus suis*, l. 140—160, p. 34.

Καὶ γὰρ πικιναὶ με καὶ ἀργαλαίαι μελεδῶνες—  
Οὐρανόθεν κατὰγουσιν ἐπὶ χθόνα μητέρ' ἐμοῖο.



from his travels in the East (especially in Syria, Palestine, and Egypt) a still higher reverence for the monastic life, had prepared a solitary asylum in Pontus, and there collected around him several persons of a like mind.<sup>1</sup> But he especially now desired to see near him his old acquaintance, Gregory, and with pressing earnestness sent him an invitation to join him. Gregory, however, could not follow immediately, greatly as he wished to do so, and thus wrote his excuses to his friend:<sup>2</sup> ‘To make at once a candid confession, I have not kept the promise which I made to you, while we sojourned together as friends at Athens,—viz., to live with you after a philosophic<sup>3</sup> (*i. e.*, ascetic) fashion. But, in truth, I have unwillingly broken my word, and only because a higher duty, which prescribed to me the care of my parents, outweighed the subordinate claims of brotherly

---

<sup>1</sup> They therefore lived a cœnobite or conventual life, which Basil preferred to that of the anchorite. He was well aware that the life of entire solitude, though it allows a more undisturbed contemplation of divine things, may yet at the same time very easily become dangerous; that, whilst it begets in him spiritual arrogance, the hermit is not subjected to the trials of virtue which serve as its probation in common life; nor has he any opportunity of comparing himself with other men, better and holier than himself. Basil, on this account, devised a plan, which Gregory thus describes: ἀσκητήρια καὶ μοναστήρια δειμάμενος μὲν, οὐ πόρρω δὲ τῶν κοινωνικῶν καὶ μιγάδων, οὐδὲ ὥσπερ τειχίῳ τινὶ μέσῳ, ταῦτα διαλαβὼν καὶ ἀπ’ ἀλλήλων χωρίσας, ἀλλὰ πλησίον συνάψας καὶ διαζεύξας: ἵνα μήτε τὸ φιλόσοφον ἀκοινωνήτον ᾖ, μήτε τὸ πρακτικὸν ἀφιλόσοφον. *Greg. Orat.* xliii. 62, p. 817.

<sup>2</sup> *Gregor. Epist.* 5, al. 9, p. 769.

<sup>3</sup> It may here, once for all, be remarked, that Gregory not unfrequently designates, by the expression ‘philosopher,’ the Christian ascetic and monk, and speaks of their mode of life as that which is truly ‘philosophic.’ Compare, among other places, particularly *Orat.* iv. 71, p. 110; this use of terms, accommodated to the sense attached to them at the time, is common to Gregory, with other cotemporary writers. See Suiceri *Thesaur. Eccles.*, sub verbo φιλοσοφία, vol. ii. p. 1441.

friendship.' Gregory, however, promises to spend at least a portion of his time alternately with Basil.

Several epistles of a more playful character were exchanged between the two friends on this subject, in which they both delineate the annoyances of their residence in a cheerful tone and in lively colours.<sup>1</sup> It may not be superfluous to extract from other, more serious letters of these friends some passages which exhibit to us the life of these seclusionists from its brighter and purer side, and admit us to a more lively view of its circumstances and relations. They already knew how to select spots remarkable for their agreeable character or wild beauty for their place of residence; this is manifest from Basil's description of his abode.<sup>2</sup> 'There is (he writes) a lofty chain of mountains, covered with a thick forest, well watered on the north side by cool, clear brooks; at its foot is an expanse of gently-sloping fields, which are always enriched and fertilized by the mountain-streams. This meadow-land is naturally and so thickly fenced round with trees of the greatest variety, that they form almost a regular enclosure, and shut it in like a solitary island. On two sides descends a deep ravine; on the third side the stream throws itself from a declivity into the depth below, and forms an impassable barrier. And how shall I still further describe the sweet smell of the meadows, the refreshing breezes from the river, or the variety of flowers, and the vast number of singing-birds? But what makes the spot most pleasing to me, is that in addition to its fruit-

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregor. *Epist.* 6—8, al. 10—12, pp. 770—772.

<sup>2</sup> Basil, *Epist.* 14, t. iii. p. 93, ed. Garn. Gregory replies in a lively style to this letter, parodying the verbose phraseology of Basil. Greg. *Epist.* 7, al. 11, p. 770.

fulness in all other respects, it affords to me the sweetest fruit of quiet and repose; and this not merely because of its remoteness from the bustle of the city, but because no wanderer ever treads this lonely wilderness, unless it be occasionally some hunter, who is in pursuit, not of bears or wolves (of which there are none), but of the deer, the roe, the hare, which this track produces in great numbers.'

In such agreeable terms does Basil describe the spot where he resided. But the most charming scenery, the stillest solitude, can give no repose to the mind which does not already possess it. The tide of the passions is not appeased by the beauties of Nature; another kind of influence is required for that,—an influence, however, which may certainly be aided and supported by the milder, and even the grander impressions of Nature. On this point we have a very remarkable confession in another of Basil's epistles:<sup>1</sup> 'What I now do in this solitude, by day and by night, I am almost ashamed to say. *I may, indeed, have relinquished my residence in the city as a source of a thousand evils; but myself I cannot leave behind.* I am like those persons who, being unaccustomed to the sea, and attacked with sickness, descend from the large ship, because it rolls so violently, into a little boat, but find that there also they retain their sensations of nausea and giddiness. So it is also with me, for while I bear about with me my inherent passions, I am everywhere alike in distress. Therefore it is that, on the whole, I have not made much spiritual progress by virtue of this solitary life.'

Basil nevertheless endeavours, in the subsequent

---

<sup>1</sup> Basil, *Epist.* 2, t. iii. p. 71.

part of the epistle, to prove that retirement from the world's business, celibacy and solitude, are still necessary for true peace of mind. 'Retirement, however (says he), consists not in the act of removal from the world, but in this,—that we thus draw off the soul from the bodily impressions which stir up the passions; that we give up our native city and our father's house, our goods and chattels, friendship and marriage, business and occupation, art and science, and are wholly prepared to receive no impressions in our hearts but those only of divine teaching.'

It is possible (Basil thinks) in solitary retirement gradually to tame the passions, like wild beasts, by gentle treatment; to lay them asleep, to disarm them by turning away the mind from the allurements of sense, and employing it abstractedly in the contemplation of God and of eternal beauty; it is possible thus to elevate humanity to a forgetfulness of natural wants, and a blissful freedom from care and anxiety. The means recommended by him are chiefly the reading of Holy Scripture, the rule of life, and also the study of the lives, of holy men; prayer, which, when devoutly practised, brings down the Godhead to us, and purifies the soul to be its dwelling-place; and lastly, an earnest, habitual silence, that is more inclined to learn than to teach, but by no means of a morose or unfriendly character. At the same time, Basil desires that the outward appearance of one thus cultivating solitude should correspond with his internal condition. With a meek and downcast eye, with untrimmed hair, clad in sordid, neglected apparel, his gait should neither be an indolent saunter nor yet impetuous haste, but gentle and quiet. His garment, fastened round his loins with a belt, should be of coarse



texture, not of a brilliant colour, suited alike for summer and winter, so substantial as to keep the body warm without any additional clothing; as to his shoes or sandals, let them also be suitable and without ornament. For food, let him use only what is most necessary, principally vegetables; let water serve for drink, at least for the healthy. For the principal meal, which is to begin and end with prayer, *one* hour should be fixed. His sleep should be short, light, and never so sound that the soul should be left exposed to the impressions of seducing dreams.

In such terms Basil describes the monastic life. How much he contributed by his zealous practice to its spread in those parts, and to draw the monks to the neighbourhood of cities, in order to assist the higher clergy, and thereby into a more ecclesiastical life, is well known. Equally notorious also is it, how much farther the monks of the East, from respect to Basil, carried his rules and regulations in the following centuries.<sup>1</sup> That vivid description failed not of its object in regard to Gregory of Nazianzum. We soon see him, in fulfilment of his promise, setting out for Pontus. Here he lived with Basil a life of prayer, spiritual meditation, and manual labour. One portion of the day was set apart for the labour of the garden and the management of household matters, the rest to the study of Holy Scripture and to religious exercises. One fruit of these

---

<sup>1</sup> We still, as it is well known, possess a series of monastic regulations (some longer and some shorter), under the name of Basil; but that all of them originated with him, or exactly in this form, is more than doubtful. The reader may consult, on this subject, the extended investigations of Basil's learned Editor, Garnier, in *Præfat*, p. 34, et seq.

studies, which were not simply practical, but also of a learned character, is said to be the extracts from the exegetic writings of the great Origen, which we possess as the work of the two friends,<sup>1</sup> under the title of *Philokalia*. This residence in Pontus was a source of great enjoyment to Gregory. At a subsequent period, when, with earnest longing, he thought of the higher life they had lived together, he called to mind with the same child-like pleasure a beautiful plane-tree, which he had planted in the vicinity of their abode,<sup>2</sup> and Basil was wont to water, ‘Who (he writes to his friend) will give me back those earlier days, in which I *revelled in privations* with you? For voluntary abstinence is indeed far nobler than its enforced practice. Who will restore to me those songs of praise and night-watchings, those upliftings of the soul to God in prayer, that un-earthly, incorporeal life, that communion and soul-harmony of the brethren who had been elevated by your precept and example to a godly life? Who will re-kindle in me that eager penetration into the Holy Scriptures, and the light which we found therein under the guidance of the Spirit?’

---

<sup>1</sup> Socrates (in his *Eccles. Hist.* iv. 26), after remarking how both these friends had adopted in common the monastic life, says: μετ’ οὐ πολὺ τὰ Ὠριγένους βιβλία συνάγοντες, ἐξ αὐτῶν τὴν ἐρμηνείαν τῶν ἱερῶν γραμμάτων ἐπέγνωσαν—(a fact which the students of Gregory’s scriptural expositions would remark for themselves, even without the testimony of Socrates). Gregory himself transmits this Exegetic Chrestomathy, from Origen’s Works to a friend, with these words: ἵνα δέ τι καὶ ὑπόμνημα παρ’ ἡμῶν ἔχης, τὸ δ’ αὐτὸ καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Βασιλείου πυκτίον ἀπεστάλκαμέν σοι τῆς Ὠριγένους Φιλοκαλίας, ἐκλογὰς ἔχον τῶν χρησίμων τοῖς φιλολόγοις. *Epist.* 87, p. 843. Abundant literary information concerning this *Philokalia* may be seen collected in Fabricius’ *Bibliothec. Græc.*, vol. vii. p. 221, ed. Harl.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 9, p. 774.

## CHAPTER IV.

THE PUBLIC LABOURS OF GREGORY FOR THE ESTABLISHMENT  
OF PEACE.

GREGORY appears, however, not to have stayed very long with his friend. Perhaps he intended from the first only a short visit, and probably (as most of his biographers<sup>1</sup> suppose) he was induced to return to Nazianzum by the following occurrence. During the endless and unhappy disputes concerning the relation of the Godhead of the Son to the Godhead of the Father, after several synods, none of which had produced a permanent or harmonious result, Constantius<sup>2</sup> (who notoriously favoured Arianism) convoked (A.D. 359) a new general council, but so contrived that the Eastern bishops were to assemble at Seleucia, in Isauria; those of the West, at Ariminum (now Rimini), in Italy. By means of this division (on the principle of *divide et impera*), he reckoned the more securely on carrying out his own particular views. We are here more particularly concerned with the latter meeting. The Fathers of the Church assembled at

---

<sup>1</sup> For instance, Tillemont, *Memoir. pour servir à l'Histoire Eccles.*, t. ix. p. 345. Schröekh, *Kirch. Gesch.*, vol. 13, p. 287.

<sup>2</sup> The reign of Constantius was properly the age of synods. By this frequent holding of councils, he not only promoted controversy, but also injured the imperial revenue, destroyed the post establishments for travellers, and brought everything into confusion. See Ammian. Marcellin., xxi. 16: *Christianam religionem absolutam et simplicem anili superstitione confundens: in qua scrutanda perplexius, quam componenda gravius excitavit discidia plurima: quæ progressa fusius aluit concertatione verborum: ut catervis antistitum jumentis publicis ultro citroque discurrentibus per synodos, quas appellant, dum ritum omnem ad suum trahere conantur arbitrium, rei vehiculariæ succideret nervos.*

Rimini,<sup>1</sup> at first, and as long as they acted independently, and unalarmed by the threats of the court, confirmed the Nicene council in its entire compass, approved the use of the particularly disputed word ‘substance,’<sup>2</sup> and condemned as well, in general, the Arian opinions, as the principal advocates of the same in particular, as Ursacius, Valens, Germinius, Aurentius, Gaius, and Demophilus, after Ursacius and Valens, at the commencement of the proceedings, had in vain endeavoured to bring the assembly to a ratification of the Sirmian formula of belief, which favoured Arianism. They informed the Emperor of this decision by a delegacy from their body, consisting of twenty, and requested of him permission to return to their dioceses, and protection during their journey.<sup>3</sup> These delegates, however, were anticipated by the artful leaders of the opposite party, who knew how to prejudice the Emperor (who was, besides, an Arian) in favour of themselves and against the synod. When the delegates of the orthodox party arrived, Constantius did not give them an audience, excused himself on the plea of an urgent military enterprise against the Persians, and showed a desire of detaining the bishops

---

<sup>1</sup> See Mansi, *Collect. Concil.*, iii. 293. Socrat. *Hist. Eccl.*, ii. 37. Sozom. iv. 17. Theodoret. ii. 15. All that is to be learnt from the writings of Athanasius, Hilary, and Jerome, respecting this council is to be found in Mansi.

<sup>2</sup> Substantia, *ὁυσία*—*i. e.*, in favour of the homoousian doctrine.

<sup>3</sup> The bishops thus express themselves, in the document preserved by Hilary, in their address to Constantius: ‘Oramus etiam ut præcipias tot episcopos, qui Ariminio detinentur, inter quos plurimi sunt, qui ætate et *paupertate* defecti sunt, ad suam provinciam remeare: ne destituti suis episcopis laborent populi ecclesiarum.’ The bishops of Gaul and Britain, probably in order to maintain themselves in greater independence, boarded themselves at their own cost, while the other bishops lived at the public expense.



at Ariminium,<sup>1</sup> whilst he meanwhile prepared a smaller synod at Nicæa<sup>2</sup> in Thrace, and one which proceeded more agreeably to his wishes. Here the formula of the Sirmian council (which had already been proposed by the Arians at Ariminium) was adopted with slight alterations. In that formula the true Godhead of Christ, and that he was begotten before all beginnings (before all Eons), was certainly asserted; but at the same time, the main disputed points were so artfully treated, that in reference to them they could also be turned to the advantage of the Arian theory. Of the Son, it was said that he was *'like (ὅμοιος) to the Father, according to the Scripture,'* but the important words, *'in all things' (κατὰ πάντα)*, were left out, and the use of the term *'substance'* rejected, because it does not occur in Holy Scripture. The decisions of this so-called conciliabulum at Nicæa were then forced also upon the larger assembly at Ariminium, which actually received them,<sup>3</sup> and was mean

---

<sup>1</sup> As the bishops conducted themselves courteously to the Emperor, they would, he thought, grow more yielding by delay. He therefore appointed the delegates to meet him at Adrianople, but at an indefinite time—viz., when he should have finished a war which he was just then beginning with Persia. To the Bishops at Ariminium he wrote thus: *Vestræ autem gravitati, interea ne molestum sit, eorum reversionem expectare.* The assembled prelates therefore once more, at the near approach of winter, most urgently repeated their requests. Socrat., ii. 37.

<sup>2</sup> Socrates and Sozomenus assign as a motive for this choice of the city of Nicæa, the hope of deceiving the ignorant by confounding the Nicene with the Nicæan creed: *τῷ παρομοίῳ τοῦ ὀνόματος συναρπάζειν τοὺς ἀπλουστέρους βουλόμενοι τὴν ἐν Νικαίᾳ γὰρ τῆς Βιθυνίας πίστιν εἶναι ἐνόμιζον*—says Socrat., ii. 37. But, surely, such a confusion of things and places would have presupposed very great simplicity and ignorance of the points of the controversy.

<sup>3</sup> At least, the majority of the members did so; only twenty out of more than 400 bishops remained true to the Nicene system:

enough to thank the emperor for his despotic mode of instruction.<sup>1</sup> Encouraged by the result, he forthwith required all the bishops of his empire, even in the East, to subscribe this formula, and applied force to those who resisted.

This subscription was of course required also of the Bishop of Nazianzum, the father of our Gregory. He did indeed so subscribe; whether he were intimidated by the imperial threats, or from a desire of peace, or from ignorance of the snare that was laid for him; though he had hitherto been a supporter of the Nicene Confession of Faith. This step, however, which he probably took without a wrong intention, was attended with serious results for him. The monks of his diocese (as almost all monks of the time) were already, from their founder Saint Antonius, decided followers of Athanasius, and now, in no very mild fashion, made their bishop sensible of his dogmatic error. They were, (as the younger Gregory informs us,) though generally quiet and peace-loving, yet, when the defence of the orthodox faith was concerned, zealous, violent, and contentious to the extreme; and a regular schism would have taken place in the otherwise united community of Nazianzum,

---

it is very mildly expressed by an ancient reporter, who says: Cui orthodoxorum *aliqui metu* (they must have been the majority), alii fraude decepti, subscripserunt. Quibus qui assentiri nollent, in extremas orbis partes exulatum mittebantur.

<sup>1</sup> The epistle of the bishops to Constantius, a model of abject flattery, begins thus:—‘*Inlustratis pietatis tue scriptis, maximas Deo retulimus et referimus gratias, quod nos beaveris intimans nobis illa, quæ cum discursione pietatis tuæ facere deberemus. . . . O nos beatos, quibus occurrit tanta felicitas,*’ &c. And so it proceeds in a still ascending scale of flattery, up to ‘domine, piissime imperator,’ with which in conclusion they greet an emperor, equally remote from every kind of *piety*.—See Mansi, pp. 315, 316.

had not the Bishop's son himself interposed in the business. It is not quite clear whether or not the younger Gregory had himself taken part in the false step taken by his father,—the subscription of the Ariminian formula. According to some passages in his writings, it might almost seem to have been the case;<sup>1</sup> but he would easily be forgiven by the monks, with whom he was held in singular estimation on account of his inclination to a solitary and ascetic life. Being therefore beloved and revered on both sides, he was the most suitable mediator; and he actually brought about an entire reconciliation, while he prevailed upon his father to make a public confession of a perfectly orthodox faith.<sup>2</sup> In an oration delivered on this occasion, he could praise both parties—the monks for their ardent zeal, though

---

<sup>1</sup> Especially *Orat.* xviii. 18, p. 342. The Benedictine editors are, however, by no means inclined to admit of such an error in so powerful a defender of the orthodox doctrine, and say: *Id pietati erga parentem et humanitati datum videri debet, ut de culpa velut communi loquatur.* Nicetas also, the commentator of Gregory, did the same before them.

<sup>2</sup> In the account here given I have followed that arrangement of things which appears to me most natural (and which Schröekh also has observed), without at the same time overlooking the fact, that the learned Benedictine, Clemencet, adopts quite another chronological arrangement. He places the division occasioned in the Nazianzen Church by the subscription of the elder Gregory in the year of our Lord 363, and therefore not in the reign of Constantius, but at the close of that of Julian, or early in the time of Jovian; the settling of the dispute he places in the year 364. His reasons must be sought in his own work; to me they do not appear convincing. It seems to me much more probable, from internal grounds, that the elder Gregory subscribed the formula of Ariminium during the government of the Arian Constantius (and therefore A.D. 360), and that the passages in the later discourses of Gregory (of the years 362 and 363), and which pre-suppose a perfectly peaceable state of the Nazianzen community, have just so far a relation to that event, as they show the complete *restoration* of peace and unity.

just then mistaken and exaggerated in defence of the right faith; his father, for his public confession, whereby he had shown, that though he had externally wavered, yet he had always been orthodox in heart and mind.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory looks upon the temporary separation only as an event through which the necessity of peace and harmony may have been made more manifest; and this peace, the ancient boast of the church of Nazianzum, is most urgently recommended by him,—God himself, in the eternal harmony of his being, the angels in their happy union, and the universe in its beautiful order, being made use of by him as striking emblems of peace. The true ground of union, however, should always rest upon agreement in the faith in God and in the doctrines taught by Him.

---

## CHAPTER V.

GREGORY IS MADE A PRESBYTER, AND SOON AFTER WITHDRAWS HIMSELF FROM NAZIANZUM.

WHETHER or not Gregory came forth from his retirement for the purpose of adjusting this disagreement, or was already residing again in his native city—at all events he was there now, and had conferred a benefit upon it by his public services. This must have procured for him still higher respect and general affection. The whole community and his father (the latter especially) wished him to take a part in the spiritual care of the Church at Nazianzum. He himself declined it, partly out of fondness for contemplative retirement, partly from a holy

---

<sup>1</sup> Compare *Orat.* vi. 12, pp. 178—194.



awe for the high and serious obligations which the sacred office imposes. On this occasion the following incident occurred, one that seems more remarkable to our generation than it did at that time, when it not unfrequently happened. On a high festival (probably at Christmas, A.D. 361), the aged bishop, Gregory, came forward before the assembled congregation (who seem to have been cognizant of his intention, or at all events were ready to support their bishop),<sup>1</sup> and ordained his son to the priesthood, who did not anticipate such a proceeding, but could not resist the joint weight of paternal authority and episcopal power.<sup>2</sup> That the younger Gregory did

---

<sup>1</sup> The ancient commentator, Nicetas, takes this as a settled point, when he says, (vol. ii., p. 1091, *Nazianzeni*,) *Theologum hortati fuerant, vel potius compulerant, ut sacerdotium susciperet, ipsosque pasceret.*

<sup>2</sup> Such forced elections and ordinations were at that time of very ordinary occurrence. 'If worldly-minded men (says Neander, in his *Life of John Chrysostom*, vol. II. p. 97) sought to obtain appointments in the chief cities by assuming for a time the mask of monastic sanctity, or by bribes and artful practices, so, on the contrary, *men of pious minds* were deterred therefrom by the mixture of the worldly and the spiritual elements in the Church, and could not, *without a lengthened struggle*, bring themselves to undertake the episcopal office.' Occasionally, the reluctance to accept an ecclesiastical appointment was indeed only assumed, and concealed a higher ambition; sometimes it was even the expression of a pride, for which the offered appointment was too insignificant. Every kind of information on this subject, with its usages and abuses, is to be found in Bingham's *Eccles. Hist.*, iv. ch. 7, vol. II. p. 189 et seq. An election of this hasty, arbitrary, violent kind, generally proceeded from the people, as, among others, in the case of Augustine, which is given us by Possidius, in *Vit. Augustin.*, cap. iv.: . . . . cum Augustinum tenuerunt, et, *ut in talibus consuetum est*, episcopo ordinandum intulerunt, omnibus id uno consensu et desiderio fieri perficique petentibus, magnoque studio et clamore flagitantibus, ubertim eo flente. The only way in which a person could protect himself against such violence, was by a solemn vow made at the moment, that he would not allow himself to be ordained. See Basil, *Epist. Canon.*

not shrink from the office in mere outward pretence, and from spiritual pride would only suffer himself to be forced into ecclesiastical duties, is proved sufficiently by his subsequent conduct. He declared, not only now at the time, but also on many following occasions, that the transaction was an act of spiritual tyranny,<sup>1</sup> and in his indignation thought he might allow himself to act on the occasion in a way which, in some measure, opposed violence to violence. He withdrew himself, and fled to his friend Basil in Pontus (probably about the feast of Epiphany, A.D. 362). Here he had time to reflect, and probably soon perceived the precipitancy of his proceedings. In the quiet of retirement, the wishes of his parents and his countrymen might appeal the more urgently to his heart,<sup>2</sup> and the outward call forced upon

---

*ad Amphiloeh.*, cap. x. : Οἱ ὁμνύοντες μὴ καταδέχεσθαι τὴν χειροτονίαν, ἐξομνύμενοι, μὴ ἀναγκαζέσθωσαν ἐπιорκεῖν. A series of examples of these compulsory ordinations (principally of the fourth and fifth centuries) are to be found in Bingham, *loc. cit.*, p. 189 et seq. Among them may be classed the instance (not mentioned by him) of Basil, who, as well as his friend Gregory, was ordained priest against his inclination. *Gregor. Epist.* xi., al. 15, p. 775. We may here be allowed to call to mind Scotland's noble-minded, pious, energetic reformer, John Knox, in whose case this custom of christian antiquity was repeated, when he showed himself as scrupulous and conscientious as any of the most pious individuals of the earlier centuries. See Thomas M'Crie's *Life of John Knox*, in Planck's edition, pp. 76—80.

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, l. 345 :

Οὕτω μὲν οὖν ἤλγησα τῇ τυραννίδι—  
 Οὕτω γὰρ ἄλλως τοῦτ' ὀνομάζειν ἰσχύω,  
 Καὶ μοι τὸ θεῖον πνεῦμα συγγινώσκέτω  
 Οὕτως ἔχοντι.

Gregory wrote this some ten years after the circumstance, and therefore no longer in the passionate excitement of the first moment.

<sup>2</sup> When Gregory, surnamed Presbyter, in his biography of our Gregory, introduces, as co-operating for this purpose, distinct hortatory epistles of the aged father, (ὁ δὲ πατὴρ . . . ἐπιστολαῖς ἐνσωπητικαῖς τὸν Γρηγόριον πειθεῖ πρὸς τὴν ἐπάνοδον· ὁ δὲ

him by his father might also become a living, inward voice. Towards Easter<sup>1</sup> of the same year he returned to Nazianzum, and on that festival delivered his first Oration<sup>2</sup> in his new ecclesiastical character.

He commenced with these words: ‘The day of the Resurrection, a happy commencement! let us mutually enlighten, let us embrace one another on this great festival. Let us address as ‘*brethren*’ even, *those* who hate us, how much more those who, out of love, have done or suffered anything (of violence); let us forget it all, on this our Lord’s resurrection-day. Pledge we mutual forgiveness; I, who in an honourable manner was tyrannically treated (for even now I so consider it), and you, who in so honourable a manner exercised that tyranny over me. If you had reason to blame me for hanging back, still it might have been better and more praiseworthy in the sight of God than the over-haste of others. It has its merit, to hold oneself back awhile at the call of God, as in old time we see in Moses, and subsequently in Jeremiah; and it also has its merit, to

---

φοβερὸν κρίνας παρακοὴν πατρὸς, καὶ ἱερέως, καὶ πρεσβύτου, ἐπάνεισί —) all this, as well as much else in this almost exclusively panegyric biography, may have had no solid foundation. Gregory himself, in his *Carmen de Vit. sua*, line 361, p. 6, says only:

————— ἀδελφὸς ἐς βυθὸν τρέχω,  
Δείσας στεναγμὸν πατρικῶν κινήματων (al. μηνιμάτων).

<sup>1</sup> Gregory says, *Orat. I. 2*, p. 4: Μυστήριον ἔχρισε με, μυστηρίῳ μικρὸν ὑπεχώρησα . . . μυστηρίῳ καὶ συνεισέρχομαι. We cannot more suitably explain these expressions than by referring them to Christmas, Epiphany, and Easter. Nicetas in like manner says, in his commentary on this passage (vol. ii. p. 1093), In die festo sacerdos factus sum, fortasse Natalis Christi, et in festo die secessi, Luminum fortasse, et in festo die redii, Paschatis scilicet.

<sup>2</sup> The first oration in the edition of the Benedictines, who with good reason thus place it, though it is elsewhere reckoned as the fourth.

come forward readily and willingly, when God calleth, as did Aaron and Isaiah. Only, both must be done in a dutiful spirit; the former in a sense of indwelling weakness, the latter, in *a confident reliance on the strength of Him who calleth.*'

The conduct of Gregory in the instance above related has been highly approved by many, and by many also, with more or less severity, blamed. It has received unqualified commendation from those who looked upon Gregory only through the halo-medium of the Saint, and therefore acknowledged all his proceedings as canonical; it has been followed with unqualified censure from those who, out of mere opposition, have exaggerated even the weaknesses of this and of other holy men into crying sins. They have found therein mere folly, contempt of the priestly office, haughtiness, and a pride which, by stepping over the presbyterate, would fain mount up to the episcopate.<sup>1</sup> Such and similar judgments were passed even in Gregory's time. He found himself, therefore, obliged to throw a clearer light (in the form of a fuller apologetic statement)<sup>2</sup> upon his

---

<sup>1</sup> The same charge was also made against S. Augustine when with tears he resisted his ordination to the presbyterate: *Nonnullis quidem lacrymas ejus, ut nobis ipse retulit, tunc superbe interpretantibus, et tanquam eum consolantibus ac dicentibus, quia et locus presbyterii, licet ipse majore dignus esset, appropinquaret tamen episcopatui.* Possid. *in Vit. Augustin.*, cap. iv.

<sup>2</sup> This statement, called *ἀπολογητικὸς τῆς εἰς τὸν πόντον φυγῆς κ. τ. λ.*, is printed in the Benedictine edition as the second Oration; but, as it is clear from the first glance, it is too long (reaching, as it does, from p. 11 to p. 65) to have been spoken, at least in that form. Gregory probably delivered only that part which is properly apologetic, and afterwards worked it up with additions, so that it became the diffuse treatise which now lies before us, and consists principally of Gregory's views concerning the clerical order in general. The same view of this apology of Gregory's was also entertained by Elias of Crete.



conduct, and the motives which led to it. It is not a superfluous labour to bring forward from thence the points of greatest weight, and thus to listen, as it were, to the man himself instead of his zealous eulogists on the one side, or his severe censurers on the other.

Gregory, then, certainly confesses that it was a mixture of refractoriness and pusillanimity (στάσις καὶ ὀλιγοψυχία) which caused his flight. He remarks, however, at the same time, that he did not take that step without thought or meaning, like an inexperienced boy, but from a conviction that he did not thereby transgress any divine law or ordinance. The grounds on which he had been induced to disobey his father were the following:—In the first place, the whole proceeding had so taken him by surprise, that, like thunder-stricken men, he lost almost all recollection. In the next place, an indefinite longing just then seized him for the beautiful life of still retirement, which in his early days he had so passionately loved, and which, in one of the most critical moments of his life (*i. e.*, during the storm on his voyage to Athens), he had solemnly promised to God. To these reasons was added one, respecting whose validity and purity Gregory himself seems to doubt—the bad condition of the clergy was so painful to him, that he could with difficulty make up his mind to enrol himself with such unworthy associates. ‘I was ashamed,’ he says, ‘of many, who not at all better than the rest of the people (nay, good were it if they were not worse), obtruded themselves into the most holy duties and places, with unwashed hands and unconsecrated hearts, and ere they were worthy only to assist in holy celebrations, themselves conducted the business of the altar. Alas! there are already so many of these uncalled rulers in the Church,

that they almost exceed the number of the flock to be ruled over.' To the last and (as Gregory solemnly asserts) the most weighty reason for his flight, no one, assuredly, will refuse his full approbation. It is excellently expressed in his own simple words: 'I considered not myself worthy (nor do I now so consider myself) to preside as shepherd over a flock, and to undertake the responsibility of guiding the souls of men.' In order to show this, he lays open at great length the qualifications which may justly be required in the truly clerical character.

These, then, are his reasons. If we allow no definite weight to the first, as being only a transient feeling, nor grant anything to the second, as a false impression; nay, should we even discover in the third reason some degree of spiritual pride (since no man is permitted to withdraw himself from a post of honour, because he reckons on finding there a great number, or even a majority of unworthy associates, but rather is so much the more bound to restore the sullied honour of the station), yet certainly in the last we cannot fail to recognise a state of mind truly worthy of respect. And since Gregory is so honest as to confess his weakness, so should we be so just as to believe his solemn assurance, that the consciousness of his insufficiency and unworthiness was his most weighty inducement. We shall thus, if not approve the step he took, at least excuse it, and pay deserved honour to what was generous in it.

In the same apologetical treatise, Gregory also specifies the considerations which had induced him to return home, and undertake the duties of the presbyterate which had been forced upon him. They are as follows: a yearning affection for the Church of Nazianzum, with the feeling that he was beloved by its members, and earnestly

wished for to be its spiritual guide ; anxiety for his aged parents, who would be bowed down more by his absence than by their advanced age ; but especially the example of holy men of ancient times, whose lives he looked upon as an influential source of counsel<sup>1</sup> and earnest warning for his own conduct.

Scarcely had Gregory entered upon his office, when he had to experience the fickleness of human applause. The ardent desire of the Nazianzen community for his ministration was no sooner gratified, than their love already began to cool. His sermons were but thinly attended, and he thought he observed, in general, a certain indifference to his person. He took occasion, in a particular discourse, to express his wonder and dissatisfaction thereat, though he did this with mildness and skilfully-mingled praise.<sup>2</sup> In this discourse he enlarges, in especial reference to himself, upon the maxim that, with men in general, an object is only valued highly while it is still to be striven for, while its extorted possession is but slightly esteemed.

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory assigns still another reason in an epistle to Basil. For *he* also, somewhat later (probably in A.D. 363 or 364), was ordained priest against his will. It is in allusion to this that Gregory writes thus to him (*Epist.* ix., al. 15, p. 575 et seq.) : ‘Thou art taken captive, as I was, who write this to thee ; we have both been forced to receive the honour of the presbyterate, for we certainly did not seek for it. We are mutually credible witnesses (more than any one else could be) that we love the meek and humble form of christian philosophy. Perhaps it were better had this never happened, or, at least (though I know not how to say it), until I had recognised the call and ordering of the Holy Spirit. But, since it has taken place, we must, as it seems to me, bear with it, *especially on account of the present time, which produces so many false teachers ; and also not to disappoint the hopes of those who place confidence in us, or disgrace the promise of our own earlier life.*

<sup>2</sup> The *Third Oration*, p. 69 et seq., in the Benedictine edition. *Πρὸς τοὺς καλέσαντας καὶ μὴ ἀπαντήσαντας.*

## CHAPTER VI.

CONCERNING JULIAN GENERALLY, AND IN RELATION TO GREGORY  
IN PARTICULAR.

(a.) *Relation of Christianity to Heathenism in Julian's Reign ;  
his Aversion to Christianity.*

WE are induced to turn our view from this more limited scene of Gregory's ministrations to a wider theatre—the Roman empire and its imperial throne, to which (in November, A.D. 361) there succeeded a man who played too striking a part in the history of religion, and stood in too marked a relation to Gregory of Nazianzum, for us not to devote to him a somewhat fuller consideration. It was *Julian*, who now, with a bold and vigorous hand, seized the reins of government over the Roman world in a spirit which threatened the greatest danger to Christianity, while he sought to give a new direction to the religious development of mankind.

Through the well-timed conversion of Constantine to Christianity, the victory of the christian cause in the Roman empire seemed fully decided, as it were, from the throne. But after a contest (and often a bloody one) of three hundred years, and fifty years of triumph, the christian Church was threatened with still greater danger. Under the outward show of toleration, weapons more dangerous than the fire and the sword were employed against her by a prince of great abilities.

The state of things was not, indeed, favourable to Julian's undertaking. The number of Christians had considerably increased in an interval of about fifty years, during which Christianity was decidedly favoured by the



throne and court.<sup>1</sup> In the more civilized provinces of the empire, and in the large cities of Rome, Constantinople, Alexandria, and Antioch, there was a majority of Christians; and the example of the Emperor and of the chief Generals must have had a decided influence upon the legions. At the commencement of Julian's reign, the Christians were far superior to the non-Christians, if not in actual number, yet in a widely-spread, well-grounded power. There existed among them generally both a higher degree of religious knowledge, and a more active zeal for their faith, than among the heathen. That knowledge was, indeed, clouded by a mass of superstition, and by a dogmatizing spirit of contention—and that zeal was considerably cooled by the acquisition of victory and undisturbed posses-

---

<sup>1</sup> It seems a fruitless labour to try to find out the *number of Christians* in proportion to that of the heathens in the reign of Julian with any exactness; just as the learned investigations and skilful conjectures (of Gibbon, *e. g.*, and others) respecting the number of Christians in the first year of Constantine's government could lead to no satisfactory results, because all the assumptions rest upon merely special, local, and temporary relations, from which, on such a subject, no valid general conclusions can be drawn. Certainly the christian population, in the first years of *Constantine*, cannot have been so small as, *e. g.*, Osiander assumes it to have been (see his *Essay* in Stäublin's and Tzschirner's *Archives*, vol. iv. part 2), because this emperor experienced, at least, no hindrance on that ground to his political plans, when he declared himself in favour of Christianity. Nor, on the other hand, can we assume the number of Christians to have been so absolutely predominant at the beginning of *Julian's* reign; because this prince (though a visionary enthusiast in the cause of heathenism, yet not devoid of sense) could still conceive the thought of making heathenism again predominant; and also because, even after Julian's fall, heathenism still maintained itself for a long while within the Roman empire. It is not, however, to be overlooked that, in such matters, success depends not so much on the *outward* show of numbers, as on the *inward*, deep-seated strength of a religious community.

sion.<sup>1</sup> But it was involved in the nature of the case, that even under these circumstances the christian religion should be able to convey (as it did actually convey) to its professors a purer, firmer, and more satisfactory conviction than that of the heathen could possibly do. Christianity contained in it the germs of a new religious and intellectual education of the world; heathenism was dead at the roots, and could only be sustained by artificial exertions; this is shown with convincing clearness by detached incidents in Julian's life. With all the power of an emperor, and all the zeal of a devoted priest, he was not once able to awaken among his subjects even the appearance of an interest in the old religion. At Antioch, on occasion of the annual feast of the once-celebrated Daphnian Apollo, which he thought to celebrate with great splendour, not an individual of the neighbourhood presented himself with a victim, except a single priest with the offering of a goose. Julian might, on such an occasion, have seen what was really the temper of the times. (See Julian's *Misopogon*, p. 362. edit. Spanhem.)

Christianity, which at first presented itself as the simple religion of the people, had, in the course of the last centuries, developed the elements which it contained for the cultivation of theological science. After the Apologists had given the first impulse, the teachers of the Alexandrian, and then of the Antiochian school, laid the foundation of a christian scientific system;

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory Nazianzen does not fail to remark, how much better the Christians in general were during the persecutions than afterwards in times of prosperity and victory. *Orat.* iv. 32, p. 92: ἦν ἐν τοῖς διωγμοῖς καὶ ταῖς θλίψεσι συνελεξάμεθα δόξαν καὶ δύναμιν, ταύτην ἐν πρᾶττοντες κατελύσαμεν.

and even in this respect, many professors of Christianity could now compete with learned heathens.<sup>1</sup> It is, moreover, not to be forgotten, that Christianity had already penetrated into all the relations of life, and was firmly rooted in society. The Church, with its clergy and (ever since Constantine) its growing and important possessions, already took its place as an influential politico-spiritual power, and everything in public, as well as in private life, from the imperial banner to the signet-ring of a citizen, had taken a christian impression. We may therefore, taking all the circumstances together, assert that Christianity, by its internal and outward power, by the number of its professors, by the adoption of a higher tone of cultivation, and its admission into all the business of life, had established itself in the most influential portions of the Roman empire.

*The enterprise of Julian to place heathenism again in the ascendant, was therefore a political as well as a religious revolution, which was to take effect by altering all the relations of external and of intellectual and spiritual life; a revolution which must needs be of the greatest difficulty, and of the most doubtful consequences, in the pursuit of which Julian, sooner or later, would probably have come to ruin, even if he had not found an early death in the Persian war. In this*

---

<sup>1</sup> The heathens, however, still maintained herein a certain superiority. The most celebrated Sophists, or teachers of philosophy and rhetoric (such as Libanius, Himerius, Themistius, and others), were heathens; and if christian youths wished to acquire a completely scientific education, and especially to become themselves future orators and rhetoricians, they always attended the heathen schools at Alexandria, Athens, or Antioch.

sense the attempt of Julian was already, in his own time, looked upon as a revolutionary enterprise. The people of Antioch reproached him with intending to bring about a total change in the relations of society;<sup>1</sup> and Gregory of Nazianzum speaks still more plainly.<sup>2</sup> ‘That clever man (Julian) did not remark that, in the earlier persecutions, the confusion and agitation were not so great, because at that time our religion had not spread so widely; but now, when the word of salvation had spread so far, and even become predominant amongst us, the attempt to interfere with the christian religion, and to *shake its hold upon men’s minds, was nothing less than a shaking of the foundations of the Roman empire*, and an attack upon the welfare of the State; something, in short, so bad, that our bitterest enemy could wish us nothing worse.’<sup>3</sup>

It was not state policy which moved Julian to attempt this revolution, for that would have urged him to carry on and improve the work which Constantine began, not to destroy it; the real motive lay in that aversion to the christian faith and its professors (both being misapprehended by him), and that ardent zeal for the old religion, which both sprung up very naturally

---

<sup>1</sup> *Misopogon*, p. 360 : ὅτι παρ’ ἐμοῦ τὰ τοῦ κόσμου πράγματα ἀνατέτραπται.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* iv. 74 and 75, p. 113.

<sup>3</sup> All the benefits which Julian’s government effected in other respects were disregarded by Gregory, who looked only to the harm resulting from a general religious disruption, which operated in favour of heathenism. ‘The commotion in the provinces and cities (he says, *Orat.* iv. 75, p. 113), the division in families, the disputes in our houses, the separations of marriage-ties (all which could not but follow, and have actually followed this great evil)—have they contributed to *his* (Julian’s) reputation, and to the well-being of the State?’



from his early education.<sup>1</sup> The religion which Constantius, the murderer of his family, professed, and which he endeavoured to impress upon him by means of ecclesiastics, in whom he could place no confidence, could not but be an object of suspicion and dislike to him. He saw in Christianity<sup>2</sup> only an unhappy perversion of Judaism,<sup>3</sup> and could not explain the contradictions which the christian records seemed to contain in relation to the Jewish, to say nothing of many supposed absurdities he attributed to the latter. He could not comprehend the feeling of reverence with which Christians regarded that Jesus, who (as it seemed to him) had done nothing worth mentioning during his lifetime, except healing a few lame and blind persons, and bringing some of the common people to believe in him.<sup>4</sup> It appeared to him an incomprehensible delusion,

---

<sup>1</sup> It cannot be my object here to give a complete delineation of Julian in the development of his character and his mode of thought. This would not only lie out of my path, but would also be superfluous, since (besides the labours of many other good men) Neander's excellent *Life and Character of Julian* has been much read, and will soon (by means of a second edition, about to appear) be still more generally circulated. I could not, however, avoid saying something on the subject, particularly as to the conduct of Julian towards Christianity, because a correct view thereof is necessary for a right estimate of the character of Gregory Nazianzen.

<sup>2</sup> Julian, as it is well known, wrote down his views of Christianity in distinct treatises, while reposing, in the long nights of winter, from the cares of government (Liban. *ἐπιταφ. ἐπὶ Ιουλιαν.* p. 581, Reisk). Only fragments of these books have been transmitted to us, in the *Refutation* of them by Cyril of Alexandria (Juliani *Opera*, ed. Ezech. Spanheim; Lips. 1696). Would that we had Julian's entire work, instead of Cyril's copious refutations! I restrain myself also (strongly as I feel allured to the task) from giving an account of Julian's view of Christianity, and this for the reason above given.

<sup>3</sup> Cyrill. *adv. Julian.*, lib. i. p. 6, and lib. vii. p. 238.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, vi. pp. 191, 213.

that the Christians turned away from the immortal gods to the worship of a deceased Jew; that they would not adore the sun and moon, which so manifestly wrought for them the highest benefits from year to year, while they considered as a God that Jesus whom neither they nor their fathers had seen.<sup>1</sup> It is quite intelligible how Julian could thus misapprehend the divinity of Jesus in his humble appearance; and we hope that we do him no injustice when we think that the cause thereof is to be found in the fundamental defect of his nature—viz., his pride and philosophic arrogance. Julian had accustomed himself too much to the bright and powerful forms of the ancient heroes to attach any value to the divine claims of Christ, concealed as they were under the simple ‘form of a servant,’ and of suffering humility. He was too much enamoured by wisdom in the form of speculation, and too much dazzled by the mystic glitter of his favourite rhetorical philosophers, for his understanding to receive the popular teaching of the Gospel, which seemed to him to present itself in the unpretending garb of a child-like and unadorned phraseology. Julian knew nothing of that state of mind, that lowly and affectionate devotedness, which Christ everywhere requires, if we would receive him as the Divine Author of our salvation. Full of energy and activity, he wished to emulate his celebrated heroes; full of wisdom, he imitated his contemplative philosophers, and turned his back contemptuously upon the Divine Sufferer, and the cross on which he suffered. His lively imagination, and his admiration of antiquity, attracted him powerfully to

---

<sup>1</sup> Julian. *epist.* 51, *ad. Alexandrinos*, p. 432. Cyrill. *adr. Julian.*, lib. vi. p. 194.

those gods, by whose protection those heroes, whom he in vain looked for among the Christian emperors, had fought and conquered. He believed that he also had been delivered by the favour of the gods from all the dangers with which the jealousy of Constantius had threatened him; that by their means he had been raised from the quiet scenes of private life, and from banishment, to the imperial throne. 'Should he not then adore these mighty, these beneficent gods? Should he not show himself thankful to them, by extending the sphere of their worship?'

(b.) *Julian's Conduct towards Christianity and its Professors.*

It is well known what Julian did, in order to make the old religion again predominant, and to overturn the new; it may be permitted me, nevertheless, to give here a short, connected review thereof, in order that we may afterwards estimate more justly the judgment passed by Gregory on this conduct.

Julian, although in many of his proceedings we cannot fail to perceive a kind of political fanaticism,<sup>1</sup> engaged

---

<sup>1</sup> Julian's political conduct was entirely grounded upon his religious convictions. He entertained a very exalted idea of a genuine ruler, and firmly believed 'that government is something which surpasses human powers—something for which a godlike nature is required.' *Orat. ad Themist. Philosoph.*, p. 253—267, in several passages. In difficult circumstances, therefore, he betook himself to the counsel and assistance of the gods. He wished to ascertain and follow their wishes. The way, however, in which he thought to learn their will had somewhat of fanaticism in it. He believed in their actual appearance—in real contact and immediate communications with the gods. What a field was here opened for the arts of the magic and theurgic priests and philosophers who surrounded him!

with consummate skill in the unequal contest with Christianity, favoured as it was by the age in which he lived. History had taught him that open warfare strengthens the persecuted party, and that the blood of martyrs was but the seed of new confessors. He hated martyrdom,<sup>1</sup> and would not allow the christian Church the honour and the advantage of it. His plan, therefore, proceeded upon a gradual undermining; he applied persecution, but it was under the show of mildness and moderation; he *subjugated gently*.<sup>2</sup> His writings, epistles, and decrees, contain the most open declarations of an universal toleration for the Christians; he only commiserates them, and wishes not to punish them for their ignorance, but instructs and teaches them. No young person was to be restrained from attending the schools and churches of the 'Galileans;' no one should be constrained to adopt the old religion through fear or force.<sup>3</sup> In similar terms of toleration he expressed himself towards the different parties in Christianity. The clergy who had been banished on account of religious opinions now dared, without distinction, to return; always excepting one, who was hated by him to the death—Athanasius!<sup>4</sup>

This show of toleration, however, was not so honestly intended. Julian had no reason for giving a preference

<sup>1</sup> Julian. *Fragment. Orationis Epistolæve cujusd.*, p. 288. This mutilated treatise probably contained many characteristic observations of Julian concerning Christianity and Christians.

<sup>2</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* iv. 79, p. 116. He says very strikingly of Julian, ἐπιεικῶς ἐβιάζετο. Compare § 69, p. 129, of this same Oration.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 42, p. 129.

<sup>4</sup> Julian. *Edict. ad Alexandr.*, *Epist.* 26, p. 398; and particularly, *Epist. ad Alexandr.* 51, p. 432, and *Epist.* 6, p. 376.



to one party among the Christians rather than another. He allowed them to exist in mutual opposition, in order that they might injure one another, and stain still deeper the christian name on the angry theatre of religious controversy. He even occasionally, out of mere contempt, procured for himself the amusement of causing the leaders of the christian parties to hold disputes in his presence.<sup>1</sup> In general, he by no means placed the Christians on a par with the heathens, in spite of the principles which he professed. He not only preferred the latter in his public appointments, but favoured them almost exclusively.<sup>2</sup> He punished most severely any acts of turbulence on the part of the Christians;

---

<sup>1</sup> Ammian. Marcellin., xxii. 5. When they were in the heat of their dispute, he would call out to them: 'Listen now to me, whom even the Alemanni and Franks have listened to!'

<sup>2</sup> Julian. *Epist.* 7, *ad Artab.*, p. 376. Gregor. *Orat.* iv. 96, p. 129. Sozomen. *Hist. Eccles.* v. 18. Liban. *Epitaph.*, p. 564. Julian by no means deserved that gratitude which he fancied himself entitled to for his tolerating all parties among the Christians. *Epist.* 52, *ad Bostrenos*, p. 435. It may certainly be maintained that Julian was a persecutor of *Christianity* rather than of *Christians*; since he did not proceed so far as to destroy Christians personally, but endeavoured, by cleverly-applied pressure, and other means, to win them over to heathenism, and thus to overturn Christianity by withdrawing its professors from it. (Compare C. F. Wigger's dissertation, *De Juliano Apostata Religionis Christianæ et Christianorum Persecutore*. Rostoch. 1810.) But, on this point, we must take into consideration that Julian *could not*, properly speaking, ever be a *persecutor of Christians*, because external means for that purpose were wanting to him against the *preponderating* power of the christian party. The assertion that Julian, from being a persecutor of the christian religion, would subsequently become a persecutor of its professors, will scarcely admit of being noticed with historical certainty, since Julian governed for so short a time. It is not, however, improbable that things would have taken this turn, when Julian had become more embittered by the opposition which, in the end, he would certainly have met with, and the heathen party had again obtained greater power.

but heathens, as well magistrates as the common people, who indulged themselves in any act of injustice or violence towards the Christians, were treated by him far more mildly—nay, even with favour.<sup>1</sup> This severity of behaviour on the part of Julian towards the Christians was often also accompanied with bitter mockery. When the Arians in the neighbourhood of Edessa, who were very rich, fell into contentions with the Valentinians of those parts, he caused the general treasure of the Church of Edessa to be taken away and distributed among his soldiers, and their estates to be incorporated with his own property. It was his wish (he said), since they were often using that admirable saying, ‘it is a hard thing for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven,’ to facilitate to them thereby their entrance into heaven.<sup>2</sup>

Julian frequently indulged himself in similar sarcasms concerning ‘the credulous disciples of ignorant fishermen, who sat and prayed all night in company with old women, and were always faint and half-dead with fasting.’<sup>3</sup> Of course, this public derision of a part of his subjects on the part of a supreme ruler must have carried with it a

---

<sup>1</sup> This, to quote only one example on that side, is sufficiently proved by the manner in which Julian spares the heathens of Alexandria, who had murdered the bishop, Georgius—while he treats with severity the Christians of Antioch, for having set on fire the temple of the Daphnian Apollo. See, on this subject, the heathen writer Ammian. Marcellin., xxii. 11, 13. Also, Sozomen., v. 3; and Gregor. Naz. *Orat.* iv. 93, p. 127.

<sup>2</sup> Julian. *Epist.* 43, *ad Heccebol.*, p. 424. The same story, though told probably with exaggeration, is found in Sozom., v. 4, 5, 8. It is the same sort of irony which is attributed to Dionysius, the plunderer of temples. Cicero *de Nat. Deor.* iii. 34.

<sup>3</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* v. 25, p. 163. For other instances of ironical mockery, not spoken merely, but written, see *Orat.* iv. 97, p. 130.

fearful force. The least insidious and (legally speaking) the least objectionable, though most dangerous means whereby Julian sought to injure Christianity, was the transfer of those regulations, which had particularly distinguished the christian Church, into heathenism. He wished to make the old religion popular by reforming its institutions. He began, therefore, at the roots—*i. e.*, by improving the priestly profession,\* to which he wished to give more real efficiency and greater respectability. He himself set the example, as the chief pontiff. He ordered that the professors of heathenism should show the same regard to the burial of the dead, the same hospitality towards strangers, the same active benevolence to the poor, as that by which the Christians had made themselves so beloved.<sup>1</sup> With this object, Julian gave directions for the erection of poor-houses and lodging-houses for strangers, and assigned considerable sums for that purpose.<sup>2</sup> He also adopted for the heathen religion that plan of popular instruction<sup>3</sup> which had wrought

---

\* In an Appendix to the *dogmatic* part (not given in this volume), what Julian and Gregory require of the ministers of the rival religions is placed in juxtaposition.—*Translator*.

<sup>1</sup> Julian makes it a special charge against christian women, that by their active benevolence they attracted many to join their *sect*. *Misopogon*, p. 363. In general, he is not at all inclined to say anything good of the christian women (see *Misopogon*, p. 356), whose virtue compelled even Libanius, on one occasion, to exclaim—‘What women have those Christians!’

<sup>2</sup> These lodging-houses, *ξενοδοχεῖα*, were instituted in every city for the needy traveller, without distinction of religion. For the province of Galatia, Julian assigns for this object 30,000 measures of corn.—*Epist.* 49, *ad Ursacium*, *pontiff of Galatia*, p. 429. He moreover invites all the heathen to voluntary contributions, and tries to rouse them to a sense of shame by quoting the example of the Christians.

<sup>3</sup> Sozom., v. 16. *Διανοεῖτο πανταχῇ τοὺς ἐλληνικοὺς ναοὺς τῇ παρσκευῇ καὶ τῇ τάξει τῆς Χριστιανῶν θρησκείας διακοσμεῖν*,

such great things for Christianity, and endeavoured, above all, to impart more life, dignity, and splendour to divine worship. For this last purpose, he made especial use of the effects of sacred music, which he particularly attended to and valued.<sup>1</sup>

Julian well knew how important it is that religion should exercise an influence upon social life, and also be placed in connexion with the institutions of the state. The heathen religion had, under the last emperors, been made to give way in this respect to the christian; he now sought to restore that relation. Every christian emblem was obliterated on the public insignia; the Imperial banner was again altered, and resumed its old Roman form and shape.<sup>2</sup> (Sozom. v. 17.) Julian sur-

βήμασί τε καὶ προεδρίαις, καὶ ἑλληνικῶν δογμάτων καὶ παραινέσεων διδασκάλοις τε καὶ ἀναγνώσταις. He farther founded (according to Sozomen) heathen convents for men and women—a proof how greatly the entire spirit of the age had inclined to monastic life! He imitated, also, the circulation of the so-called '*litteræ formatae*;'\* he introduced a kind of penitential discipline, in imitation of the christian Church, but of a milder kind (as might be expected from his *prudence*), and himself, as Pontifex Maximus, exercised the right of imposing a ban or interdiction. See Julian, *Epist.* 62, p. 451: Εγὼ τοίνυν ἐπειδὴ περ εἰμι κατὰ μὲν τὰ πάτρια μέγας ἀρχιερεὺς, ἔλαχον δὲ νῦν καὶ τοῦ Διδυμαίου προφητεύειν, ἀπαγορεύω σοι τρεῖς περιόδους σελήνης μή τοι τῶν εἰς ἱερά μὴδὲν ἐνοχλεῖν, κ. τ. λ.

<sup>1</sup> Julian. *Fragment.*, p. 301. *Epist.* 56, *ad Ecdic.*, p. 442. He gave orders at Alexandria for the education of talented boys for the public performance of temple-singing. To good singers he opened the best prospects. Church music is still the great point where so much might be done for the improvement of the Protestant worship. Would that the efforts thus made by Julian for *his* faith, might find more imitators among *Christians*!

<sup>2</sup> *Christus purpureum gemmanti textus in auro*  
Signabat labarum; *clypeorum* insignia Christus  
Scripserat; ardebat summis crux addita cristis.

PRUDENTIUS.

\* *Circulars* by which remote churches corresponded with each other, and insured hospitality to the bearers of them on their respective journeys.—*Translator.*



rounded his own statue, set up for public homage, with figures of the gods; and whosoever then testified his mark of respect for the same (and this was not unfrequently performed on festive occasions) was at the same time forced to bow his head before the images of the gods that surrounded the statue.<sup>1</sup> Nor is Julian to be pronounced free from a treacherous zeal for proselytizing. It must, of course, have been most important to him to gain over the army to his faith, and he made use of the following method for effecting it. On the general pay-day, the emperor presented himself, surrounded with the insignia of government and the figures of the gods. The soldiers passed by him in succession; before them lay gold and incense. If now, being Christians, they could yet make up their mind to cast incense on the altar-fire, and thus pay worship to the gods, they were recompensed with a look of favour from the monarch, and consoled with more liberal pay.<sup>2</sup> In this manner many bartered away their religion.

What has hitherto been remarked was rather a favouring of heathenism than a persecuting of Christianity. But we also find an ordinance of Julian, which may be considered as a more direct attack on Christianity; it

---

<sup>1</sup> We have this, indeed, only from christian authority, but it is in itself not improbable. *Gregor. Naz. Orat.* iv. 81, p. 117. *Sozom.* v. 17. Julian generally had Zeus represented near himself, as the god who gave him the crown and the purple; or Mars and Mercury, who, by their approving look, bore testimony to his warlike valour and his distinguished eloquence.

<sup>2</sup> This fact also rests only on christian evidence. *Sozom.* iii. 17. *Gregor. Naz. Orat.* iv. 82—85, pp. 117—120. Gregory, however, gives very particular details and anecdotes in direct reference to this conduct of Julian; and we see in Julian, even from his own writings, and those of his heathen admirers, a man of so much artful skill in his antagonism to the Christians, that in company with so much that was great in his character, we must also charge him with much of paltry artifice.

has, however, been differently judged of, so that we must be permitted to speak of it somewhat more fully. It was the arrangement by which he is said to have forbidden Christians to engage in the study of any science not properly christian—a prohibition whereby all the advantages of a classical education would have been withdrawn from the Christians. The philosophic emperor despised the plain and (in the best sense of the word) simple writings of the Old and New Testament, in comparison with the profound and beautiful productions of Grecian genius.<sup>1</sup>

He thought, 'that the works of antiquity, animated as they were with a high patriotic spirit, and clothed in the most perfect forms of language, could alone communicate pure and true wisdom; whilst the writings of the Christians could have no power to produce any such effects.<sup>2</sup> And as the Christians thought those works to have proceeded from Satan himself, or from Satan's agents, he did not choose that they should *feast upon*<sup>3</sup> the writings and sciences of the Greeks, but remain satisfied with only the miserable books to which they attributed such high value.' He therefore believed that he was fully justified in withholding altogether from the Christians those writings which they did not take in hand with due reverence and affection. It is not, indeed, to be denied (though it may be well accounted for

---

<sup>1</sup> Cyrill. *contra Julian.*, vii. p. 229.

<sup>2</sup> Ἄλλ' ἵστε καὶ ὑμεῖς, ὥς ἐμοὶ φαίνεται, τὸ διάφορον εἰς σύνεσιν τῶν παρ' ὑμῖν . . . οὐδ' ἂν γένοιτο γενναῖος ἀνὴρ μάλλον οὐδὲ ἐπιεικής· ἐκ δὲ τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν, αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ πᾶς ἂν γένοιτο καλλίων, εἰ καὶ παντάπασιν ἀφύης τις εἴη.

<sup>3</sup> Τοῦ χάριν ὑμεῖς τῶν παρ' Ἑλλησι παρεσθίετε μαθημάτων, εἴπερ αὐτάρχης ὑμῖν ἐστιν ἡ τῶν ὑμετέρων γραφῶν ἀνάγνωσις, κ. τ. λ.

from the violent opposition at that time existing between heathenism and Christianity) that the most distinguished Fathers, and still more the great body of common Christians,<sup>1</sup> did treat the great works of antiquity with unbecoming disrespect.

It was especially offensive to Julian, that men who denied the existence of the gods, should undertake to expound writings of which he considered the gods as the originators, and the pervading idea of which was reverence for those same gods.<sup>2</sup> As Julian required strict morality in the instructors of youth, it seemed to him the most despicable hypocrisy for a teacher to undertake, for profit's sake, the explanation of writings penetrated by the spirit of the old religion, while he himself denied the truth of that spirit. In this, he did not require that the teachers should alter their views for the sake of the young men, but only that they should not teach what was not to them earnest truth. He recommends him 'who believes that those writers sinned, through error, against the Holy One, to attend the ex-

<sup>1</sup> Gregory himself observes (without approving the feeling), that most Christians entirely despised worldly learning, as if it were morally dangerous and seductive, and tended to withdraw the mind from God. *Orat.* xliii. 11, p. 778. Many passages, nevertheless, occur in Gregory's writings which discover in him a strong partiality for the works of heathen genius.

<sup>2</sup> Julian. *Epist.* 42, p. 422. 'What!' says he; 'were not the gods the originators and directors of the mental growth of a Homer, a Hesiod, Demosthenes, Herodotus, Thucydides, Isocrates, Lysias? Have not some of them dedicated their writings to Mercury, and others to the Muses? It seems absurd, therefore, to me, for any one to expound the works of these men, and at the same time to despise the gods whom they worshipped.' . . . Οὐ μὲν ἐπειδὴ τοῦτ' ἄτοπον οἶμαι, φημί δεῖν αὐτοὺς μεταθεμένους τοῖς νέοις συνδίδωμι δὲ αἵρεσιν, μὴ διδάσκειν ἃ μὴ νομίζουσι σπουδαῖα.

positions of Matthew and Luke in the churches of the Galileans.' From these statements, it appears that Julian did not exactly forbid the Christians to engage in the study of heathen literature; on the contrary, he certainly wished that a large body of christian youths might attend the schools of the heathen rhetoricians and sophists, under the conviction that every one who had by nature anything noble in his character, must soon desert the ranks of *Atheism* (for such was Christianity in his view), and be won over to the service of the gods.<sup>1</sup> But he determined that he who undertook to explain those writings which were inspired by the gods, and exhibited their living power, should also reverence those gods in word and deed; or, to speak more plainly, that *heathens only should be the instructors of youth*.<sup>2</sup> By this decree, therefore, Christians were excluded from the teacher's chair. It was a regulation slow, indeed, in its operation, but calculated to produce great effects. It must necessarily influence the rising generation, if the sciences were taught only by heathen masters. If the Christians would not see their sons excluded from the higher branches of education, they must send them to

---

<sup>1</sup> Cyrill. *contra Julian.*, vii. p. 229.

<sup>2</sup> On this point, therefore, Sozomenus requires, without doubt, to be set right, when, in his *Eccles. Hist.*, v. 18, he says: 'He did not allow the sons of the Christians to study the Grecian poets and orators, or to attend the expositors of them in the schools.' Ammianus Marcellin. (agreeing, in meaning, with Julian's own expressions) says, much more correctly, xxv. 4: *Inter quæ erat illud inclemens, quod docere retuit magistros rhetoricos et grammaticos Christianos, ni transissent ad numinum cultum.* And Orosius, lib. vii. c. 30, says: *Aperto tamen præcepit edicto, ne quis Christianus docendorum liberalium studiorum professor esset.* See Schlosser's *Weltgeschichte*, 1st Part, p. 650, and his whole sketch of Julian.



the heathen schools, with the certain danger that, by the influence of those eloquent and zealous teachers, the seeds of heathenism would be sown in their young minds.<sup>1</sup> The christian teachers, indeed, endeavoured to remedy this sad state of things by means of poetic productions, written in the spirit of Christianity. But these specimens of forced workmanship were only necessary substitutes for the free, inspired creations of Homer, Sophocles, and Plato, those immortal instructors and models of human genius. When familiar acquaintance with Greek science was thus withdrawn from the Christians (especially the Greek Christians of that time), much that was valuable was certainly withdrawn from them; and it is erroneously asserted that Christianity, in its then condition, could have derived no advantage, or at least very little, from the adoption of a classical education. How could it bid defiance to the attacks of learned and philosophical heathens (and particularly Julian himself) without the development of the scientific elements which it contained? And how was this development to be effected, but by an union with the investigations and productions of earlier generations? How could it, without them, become the religion of the most cultivated portion of mankind,—nay, the universal religion?

Julian had a show of reason for his conduct. It seemed to him, according to his religious views,<sup>2</sup> not to

---

<sup>1</sup> As it actually happened, for instance, at Athens. See above, p. 33.

<sup>2</sup> Julian looked upon the works of the heathen writers, especially the poets, as at the same time *religious documents*, and, as such, he would not allow them to be expounded by professors of another religion, and one, in its very nature, destructive of heathenism. He proceeded on the same views and the same

be endured that the Christians should expect to extract scientific nourishment from the outward shell of those works, of which they rejected the internal, religious kernel. To his really pious mind, this *religious element* was the main point; and therefore he thought that he who disdained that, should have nothing at all. Still there was also some degree of injustice<sup>1</sup> in Julian's arrangement;<sup>2</sup> and this is particularly pointed out by Gregory of Nazianzum, when he remarks,<sup>3</sup> that the Hellenistic literature and language are by no means so necessarily connected with the heathen religion, that the one could not be made use of or enjoyed without the other. He very justly, at the same time, looks upon the works of Grecian genius as the common property of the human race, wholly unconnected with religious belief, and over which no individual, be he ever so powerful, could have exclusive authority. He asks Julian whether Hellenic civilization, the language of Athens, the noble

---

principles as we should do, in not allowing our rising youth to attend the expositions of any professor of a strange religion, and one hostile to Christianity. But it was possible to consider the works of classical antiquity from another point of view, where the religious creed is not immediately concerned; viz., to view them (as in modern times they are generally viewed) as a basis of universal application (not belonging to one nation or one religious code, but to the human race), a basis for the education of civilized humanity—an awakening model of the great, the good, the beautiful.

<sup>1</sup> If it were really just and universally applicable, we of the present day could not presume to meddle with the exposition of classical works; since we also, though judging more mercifully of the heathen religions than did the Fathers of the fourth century, are yet professors of a religion which has destroyed heathenism. [N.B.—I have given this as a *note*, instead of part of the *text*.—*Translator*.]

<sup>2</sup> Even the heathen writer Ammianus speaks of the decree as 'inclemens.'

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* iv. 102, pp. 132—136.

poems of Greece, belonged only to him; whether he intended to withhold from the Christians only the elegant and refined language of the Greeks, or, in the end, the Greek language generally, even the common vulgar form of it; and the like.

Undoubtedly Julian, although provoked by the Christians, should have understood better the limits of his power, since it does not lie within the privilege of a ruler to withhold from his subjects an important means of their accustomed education. We cannot look into Julian's soul, and see whether, under the show of zeal for the interests of the gods, he really concealed the artful design of thus giving to Christianity the most deadly blow. Manifestly, however, the worst consequences — even the gradual undermining of Christ's religion — were necessarily connected with his proceedings in this respect.

The same principle of action, under whose guidance Julian laboured with all his power for the renovation and improvement of the heathen priesthood, prompted him to have recourse to everything, in order to deprive the christian ministry of their influence, their riches, and their respectability. He could injure the Church in general most effectually through the degradation of its ministers. While he conducted himself more mildly towards the great body of the Christians, as a herd of misguided, erring creatures, he exercised severity towards their spiritual leaders, whom he looked upon as seducers and promoters of rebellion, and especially towards the undaunted champions of Christianity, such as Athanasius. He withdrew from the clergy the right of jurisdiction, which, to a certain extent, had been granted to them, immunity from state-burdens, the privilege of making

wills and receiving legacies—a power which they certainly might have often abused.<sup>1</sup> In return for this, Julian secured to the heathen priests their former privileges, and endeavoured to enrich the temples by means of public contributions.<sup>2</sup>

So much concerning Julian's conduct towards Christianity in general. The particular instances of persecution which took place under his government (and of which Gregory of Nazianzum<sup>3</sup> especially, and also Sozomenus, relate many examples with a minuteness that produces a feeling of horror and indignation) we have no necessity here to discuss, since it would be difficult to prove that Julian ordered the perpetration of such cruelties, or that they were practised with his knowledge. He may certainly have been too conniving towards the heathens, who had been embittered by the oppression exercised for some years against them by the Christians,<sup>4</sup> and were now excited by the re-action to a spirit of persecution.

We might be inclined, in a great measure, to excuse Julian's conduct towards Christianity as the result of his religious and political convictions. Certainly, his transfer of the education of youth to heathen teachers sprung from his conscientious regard for the religious character of the works of antiquity, as did his exclusive patronage of heathen candidates for public offices from

---

<sup>1</sup> Julian. *Epist.* 52, *ad Bostrenos*, p. 437. Sozom. v. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Sozom. v. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Ex. gr., *Orat.* iv. 93, p. 127, and elsewhere.

<sup>4</sup> The sophist Libanius speaks with uncommon bitterness of these christian persecutions against the heathens: *Μονωδία ἐπὶ Ἰουλιαν.* p. 509. *Ἐπιταφ. ἐπὶ Ἰουλ.* p. 529. edit. Reisk. In the first of these passages referred to, he recounts what Julian had done for the relief of depressed heathenism. p. 510 et seq.



his belief, that the institutions of the state and of religion should combine together so as to form a whole. But when Julian made such an application of these principles as must necessarily and thoroughly prove destructive to Christianity, he clearly displayed not merely a religious zeal for heathenism (which we acknowledge as the noblest, though deformed feature in Julian's mind), but also a strong and intolerant hatred towards Christianity,<sup>1</sup> a hatred which we can the less overlook through a mistaken leniency, because it did not present itself in its avowedly hostile and odious form, but under the false show of a just and impartial toleration.

In saying this, we should not deny or throw into the shade Julian's virtues in other respects as a man and as a ruler. When we have taken due notice of the youthful insolence wherewith Julian treats Christianity, the proud self-consciousness which gleams out in his actions and his writings (especially in his satirical treatment even of the greatest men in his *Cæsars*, a work full of talent and animation), the vanity with which he complacently described himself as 'a cynic-stoic on the Imperial throne,' and affected to revive in his own person the phenomenon of an ancient hero and a simple republican; still we find in him, on the other side, much that is truly great and noble; an incessant activity<sup>2</sup> for the good of

---

<sup>1</sup> Even Ammianus Marcell. confesses that Julian by no means showed his usual love of justice in regard to the Christians, and that, in this respect, he was 'interdum dissimilis sui.' See the whole of the remarkable passage, lib. xxv. 4, 19. Libanius also does not take much trouble to conceal Julian's partiality for the heathens and against the Christians. See, among other places, his *Ἐπιταφ.* p. 564.

<sup>2</sup> *Ἀεὶ γὰρ εἶχεν ἐν χερσὶν ἡ βίβλους ἡ ὄπλα*,—says Libanius, *Ἐπιταφ.*, p. 546. He could, like Cæsar, attend to different kinds of business simultaneously, and at one and the same time be read to,

his subjects (especially for the citizen); a love for impartial justice (which he forgot only in respect to the Christians); an effort to acquire the most perfect simplicity of manners; a self-denying abstinence from all the enjoyments of life; a valour worthy of the ancients; manly earnestness and severity, combined with a tender affection towards individuals, in whom he honoured mind only, not power nor rank.<sup>1</sup> It is to be regretted that this affectionate sympathy found no better subjects than those conceited rhetoricians and sophists; that the religious zeal of Julian was stained by so much bigotry; above all, that his highly-gifted mind could have so mistaken the spirit of Christianity and the mental tone of the times, and that therefore he became

---

dictate, and give an audience. Τὸ μὲν ἀναπαύεσθαι τῶν διακόνων ἦν, αὐτοῦ δ' ἐπ' ἔργον ἀπ' ἔργου μεταπεδᾶν. Liban. *Epitaph.*, p. 580. The mind and character of Julian are learnt in the best and most lively colours from his own writings, when (as we confessedly must) we strip off the clothing of sophistical rhetoric from most of his expressions. Next to Julian's own writings, Ammianus Marcellinus is particularly useful (see an interesting passage in Ammian., xxv. 4). Not quite so trustworthy are either his too partial and rhetorical friends (such as Libanius, in several writings, especially in his *Epitaphios* and his *Monodia*), or his equally prejudiced opponents, Gregory, Sozomenus, and others.

<sup>1</sup> Consult, with this view, Julian's epistles to several learned men, rhetoricians, and philosophers, of his day; among others, *Epist.* 40, p. 417, to Iamblichus, to whom, for instance, he says: 'Then came the excellent Sopater to me; as soon as I recognised him, I sprang forward delighted and embraced him, weeping for joy, because I was persuaded he was the bearer of letters from you. As soon as I received them I kissed them, pressed them to my eyes, &c.' See a similar letter to Libanius (*Epist.* 44, p. 425), to whom he expresses the modest wish 'that he were worthy of his friendship.' The *dark side* of this intercourse of Julian with his beloved sophists (a view which is certainly not to be overlooked) is given very prominently by Schlosser, in the *Weltgeschichte*, vol. i. p. 649 et seq.; and still more so in a review of Neander's *Julian*, in the *Jena Literary Gazette* for January, 1813, p. 121—133.

only a short-lived, tumultuous, alarming phenomenon, when he might have been the greatest benefactor, as well as the genius of his age.

(c.) *Gregory's Writings against Julian.*

I have deemed it the more a matter of duty to exhibit thus fully the less pleasing side in Julian's character, because it can thence only be explained why it was that many ancient christian writers (whose statements, however, we must not hastily reject) express themselves concerning this man with such unheard-of asperity. Their delineations are exaggerated, their narratives are not unfrequently disfigured by party-hatred—but still we must not regard them as *merely* the outpourings of a (generally well-meant) zealotism. For instance, it would be almost incomprehensible how the ever right-minded Gregory of Nazianzum could have written, and seasoned with such biting acrimony, his *Invectives*<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> These *Invectivæ*, or Λόγοι στηλιτευτικοί (the 3rd and 4th *Oration* according to the old arrangement, but the 4th and 5th in the more recent) extend, in the Benedictine edition, from p. 78 to p. 176. Some remarkable criticisms, both of earlier and later date, together with some literary notices concerning these *Invectives*, occur in the Introduction, by the Benedictine, Clemencet, p. 73—77; the last are given still more complete in Fabricius, *Biblioth. Græc.*, vol. viii. p. 392, ed. Harl. Among the detached editions of the *Invectives* with which I am acquainted, the following (called by Fabricius 'rara et præstans Edit.') is the most interesting: *S. Gregorii Nazianzeni in Julianum invectivæ duæ*. Cum scholiis Græcis nunc primum editis et ejusdem Authoris nonnullis aliis. Omnia ex biblioth. Henr. Savillii edid. R. Montagu. Etonæ exc. J. Norton, 1610. This edition is especially distinguished by a collection of striking various readings and comments upon all the writings of Gregory, made by Saville (who meditated an edition of Greg. Naz.), Montagu, and some friends, from a collection of many MSS. In reference to the

against Julian, then actually dead, unless Julian had really allowed himself to do much that was shocking and revolting against the Christians. We have, however, to speak somewhat more exactly of these two Philippics. It might not be uninteresting, though it would be superfluous, to analyze fully the contents of these writings, which seem animated rather by the fire of passion, than a genuine christian spirit. Some portions, however, must be brought forward to show their character. Gregory, as he himself signifies,<sup>1</sup> intended by means of these orations (which most probably were not designed to be publicly delivered, but only to be read) to raise a monument, whereby the name of Julian, in that and in every succeeding age, should be held up to universal contempt and reproach. He does not conceal his intention to represent a great prince, with whom death might be supposed to have reconciled him, as a dark monster, nor disdain, for this object, to employ the harshest terms. 'The apostate, the Assyrian, the dragon, the common enemy, the wholesale murderer,' and similar expressions, salute our ears in every part of

---

usual title, *Στηλιτευτικός λόγος*, it is worth while to compare the following *Scholion* of Nonnus (whose *Scholion* to the *Invectives* are printed by Montagu): ὁ στηλιτευτικός οὐτοσί λόγος, ψόγος ἐστὶ τῶν Ἰουλιανῶ πεπραγμένων. διαφέρει δὲ ψόγος στηλιτευτικοῦ, ὅτι ὁ μὲν ψόγος διὰ τῶν ἐγκωμιαστικῶν κεφαλαίων προέρχεται, οἷον γένους, ἀναστροφῆς, πράξεων, συγκρίσεως· ὁ δὲ στηλιτευτικός διὰ τῶν πράξεων μόνον· εἰ τύχοι δὲ καὶ συγκρίσεως· στηλιτευτικός δὲ εἴρηται ἀπὸ μεταφορᾶς τῆς στήλης, στήλη δὲ ἐστὶ λίθος, ἢ χαλκός ἐν ἐπιμῇ τετραγώνῳ σχήματι, ἐν ᾧ ἐγγέγραπται ἡ τοῦ στηλιτευομένου ὕβρις, κ.τ.λ. The word *στηλιτεύειν* and its cognate terms occur several times in the *Orations*. Compare also, on this head, Stephan. *Thesaur.*, tom. i. p. 1807, and, as there cited, Budæus in *Comment. Ling. Gr.*, and, still further, Suid. *Lex.*, tom. iii. p. 374; and Montagu *ad Gregor. Invect.*, i. not. i.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* iv. 1, p. 78; iv. 92, p. 126; v. 42, p. 176.



both these orations.<sup>1</sup> The professed object of the first is to place Julian's faults, and the tyranny he exercised against the Christians, in the strongest light; in the other (which Gregory thinks must be particularly pleasing and profitable to his readers),<sup>2</sup> he undertakes to show the infallible judgment of God upon the unrighteous, and brings forward, in this relation, the example of Julian as his main proof.

It is remarkable how the orator, while he dooms Julian to hell, invokes *the great soul* of Constantius from heaven, and heaps upon him unheard-of encomiums;<sup>3</sup> Gregory only blames Constantius (in his eyes so great and noble) for having preserved and raised to power, in the person of Julian, a man so pernicious to the empire.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* iv. 35, p. 93; iv. 68, p. 108; iv. 77, p. 115, and elsewhere. Compare *Orat.* xviii. 32, p. 352. At one time playing upon his name, Julianus, he calls him Εἰδωλιανός, at another, ironically, νοῦς μέγας, and the like.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* v. 1, p. 147.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* iv. 34, p. 93 et seq. The praises bestowed by Gregory upon Constantius are naturally heightened as an antithesis to Julian; otherwise Gregory had, we may suppose, much also to blame in Constantius, particularly his patronage of Arianism. But he even makes an excuse for him on that score: Constantius, he says, at the end of his life repented of three things; in the first place, that he caused his own kinsman to be killed; in the second, that he had nominated as Cæsar the apostate Julian; but especially, in the third place, that he had ever favoured *new doctrines*.—*Orat.* xxi. 26, p. 402, et seq. We cannot properly accuse Gregory of flattery, though we may of partiality, on account of the laudatory terms in which he speaks of the then deceased Constantius. To the charge of adulation towards Constantius, Julian himself is much more open, when he extols that prince, *while yet living*, in a most unblushing way. He all but speaks of him as not only the greatest of rulers, but as the greatest of men. *Jul. Orat.* i. in *Constantii laudes*, p. 46, and elsewhere. At a later time, and especially after the death of Constantius, Julian speaks of him with proportionably greater bitterness. See, principally, Julian. *Epist. ad Athenienses*, p. 270; and his *Cæsares*, pp. 385 and 386.

To this act of Constantius he applies the epithet of '*inhuman humanity*,'<sup>1</sup> or barbarous kindness; and yet Constantius must have been considered as having heaped crime upon crime, if he had not thus preserved the life of his near kinsman, Julian. It was, to speak the truth, a high degree of party zeal, that could deceive to such an extent the otherwise kind and gentle disposition of Gregory. It is painful to notice such features; but they belong to the accuracy of the picture.

Gregory, however, apologizes on the following grounds (as if a duty of humanity ever required an apology!) for the conduct of Constantius in preserving the life of Julian; 'he may have wished thereby to clear himself from the suspicion of having perpetrated certain crimes (the murder of Julian's family); he might desire to set Julian an example of magnanimity, as well as to give more strength to his own government; on the whole, however, he certainly displayed in this proceeding more kind-heartedness than wisdom.'<sup>2</sup> Julian, on the contrary, is the more severely censured, for having repaid God and Constantius for his preservation with such black ingratitude—the former by apostasy, the latter by revolt.<sup>3</sup> Gregory charges Julian especially with hypocrisy, because, though already for a long time devoted in heart to heathenism,<sup>4</sup> he still externally appeared to

<sup>1</sup> Ἀπάνθρωπος φιλανθρωπία.—*Orat.* iv. 35, p. 93. In another place he says: οὐ καλῶς ἐφιλανθρωπεύσατο.—iv. 3, p. 79.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* iv. 22, p. 87.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* iv. 21, p. 87.

<sup>4</sup> Gregory relates that Julian, in his youthful philosophical disputations with his brother Gallus, often undertook the defence of heathenism, under the pretence of taking the weaker side, for practice' sake; but in reality, because he could not even then wholly suppress his preference for heathenism.—*Orat.* iv. 30, p. 91.

be a good Christian ; a reproach which, assuredly, is also confirmed by the testimony of heathen writers. (See Libanius, *Epitaph.*, p. 528 ; and Ammian. Marcell., xxi. 2 ; xxii. 5.)

A singular exhibition (which, indeed, is often repeated in the pages of history) here demands our attention—viz. how superstition prevailed on both sides—the heathen as well as the christian ; each party most violently charging this upon the other, and insisting on its own freedom from it, whilst both were alike influenced by it, though under different forms. These orations of Gregory furnish examples of this. Magic arts, theurgic and prophetic pretensions, belonged to the tendencies of the age, and showed themselves, under altered appearances, among heathens and Christians ; even an education such as Julian had received could not free him from the influence. Whilst Julian censures the ‘silly, wonder-seeking credulity of the Christians,’ he fancies himself to be in constant and immediate intercourse with gods and goddesses, until he actually feels the soft contact of their presence, and does not hesitate to receive the most incredible heathen legends with the most devout renunciation of his reasoning powers ;<sup>1</sup> and while Gregory reviles the heathen superstition of his opponents, he exhibits his christian superstition by relating things which hardly any one will think of believing. Thus, on one occasion a cross, adorned with a crown, and therefore emblematic of victory, is said to have appeared in the entrails of a victim to Julian, who, it is well known,

---

<sup>1</sup> For instance : the fable, that a pure vestal-virgin drew onward by her girdle the ship laden with the statue of the great mother of the gods, which, till then, no physical force had been able to put in motion. Julian. *Orat. in Matrem Deor.*, p. 159 et seq.

attached very extraordinary value to prodigies, and himself, as a master, practised the art of soothsaying.<sup>1</sup> And again; Julian, under the guidance of his favourite theurgic philosophers, once found himself in a subterranean cave, for the purpose of exorcising ghosts; these ghosts, however (so Gregory tells the story),<sup>2</sup> rushed upon him with alarming violence, and Julian took refuge in the sign of the cross, which he had already renounced; the sign even now proved efficacious, and the demons were scared away! In the Persian war, Gregory makes Julian, besides his troops of soldiers, to be accompanied by another troop, of demons; while his admirer, Libanius, on the contrary, gives him a troop of Deities.<sup>3</sup> Thus an invisible world would seem to have been at the command of both sides!

We pass over the harsh and unjust reproaches which Gregory brings against Julian, as if he had been given to drunkenness and sensuality,<sup>4</sup> and had even involved himself in the black crime of causing the death of Constantius;<sup>5</sup> and we only remark, in conclusion (that we

<sup>1</sup> Sozomen. v. 2. Liban. *Epitaph.*, p. 582 . . . . *μαντέων τε τοῖς ἀρίστοις χρώμενος, αὐτός δὲ ὦν οὐδαμῶν ἐν τῇ τέχνῃ δεύτερος.*

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* iv. 54—56, p. 101 et seq. Sozomen relates the same anecdote, probably on the testimony of Gregory, v. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* v. 7, p. 151. Liban. *Monod.* p. 508. The latter says: *ἀλλ' ἔχων ἀμφ' αὐτὸν τοὺς θεοὺς, ὀλίγην στρατιὰν μέγα δυναμένην.*

<sup>4</sup> *Orat.* v. 22, p. 175. On the other hand, Liban. *Epitaph.* p. 582. Ammian. Marcell. xxv. 4. Et primum ita inviolata castitate enituit, ut post amissam conjugem nihil unquam venereum agitare.

<sup>5</sup> *Orat.* iv. 47, p. 90. Read, on this point, Julian's own explanation, *Epist.* xiii. *ad Julian. avuncul.* p. 382. What a dark hypocrite must Julian have been, in thus mourning for the death of Constantius! Liban. *Epitaph.* p. 561. But Julian practised no such hypocrisy; and he was too noble-minded for assassination.



may not be unfair in these imputations against Gregory), that he strongly exhorts his readers to use, not force, but gentle patience, as the truly christian weapon against tyrants; to learn meekness from the example of Christ; not to revenge themselves, but to leave the adjustment of recompence to God, while they thanked God for His wonderful protection from imminent danger, by the more zealous devotion of a christian life.<sup>1</sup> Would that he had practised in his own language the patient forbearance which he so earnestly recommends to others! Certainly, none but partizans can acquit Gregory's orations against Julian of violent prejudice; while the unprejudiced reader must wish that the good cause of Christianity had been *better* defended—that is, with more judgment and charity, and with less of passion—by the orator who was so earnest in its defence. His eloquence would then have been infinitely more effective.

Some exculpation, however, is due to Gregory. Julian's plan of government challenged every one who was in earnest for Christianity to take the field against him; and he who ventured on this contest must necessarily come forward boldly and energetically, in order, for the future also, to deter the bold hands of those who might again wish to assail the Church of Christ. Gregory looked upon Christianity as man's highest happiness,—the most precious palladium of the human race; how readily, then, would his wrath be kindled against one who aimed at the destruction of that dearest treasure. Still farther; when Gregory wrote, the whole christian world was still filled with the terror

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* v. 37, p. 172 et seq.

of Julian's government; that phenomenon had but just passed, like a portentous meteor, big with mischief, over the christian sky. Thence it was that the excited tone of that living hatred, which animated the great body of Christians, expressed itself in these orations. At that period of the great struggle for life or death between heathenism and Christianity, a just estimate of the man who, at the head of the heathen party, threatened ruin to the christian religion, was not possible, or, at least, it would have required superhuman circumspection and moderation. With less of passion, Gregory would certainly have confided more in the inward power of the Divine cause; he would not have stirred up still more the already excited minds of men; he would not have been so credulous *against* Julian and *for* the Christians; he would not have adopted the violent, dogmatizing tone, wherewith the remarkable character of Julian, as a moral phenomenon, was so frequently tossed aside, as something utterly contemptible. But who can always observe moderation, when under the influence even of a righteous anger?

(d.) *The Position in which Gregory and his Family stood towards Julian.*

It is well known that Julian removed from court almost all persons who surrounded his hated predecessor, either as members of his council or as favourite servants, and that some of them were treated with injustice and harshness.<sup>1</sup> But the brother of Gregory had

---

<sup>1</sup> Examples of this are to be found in Ammian. Marcell. xxii. 3. Among others, speaking of the execution of one such officer of the court—Ursulus, the comes largitionum—this writer says: Ursuli vero necem ipsa mihi videtur flesse Justitia, Imperatorem arguens ut ingratum.

gained for himself, as the special physician to Constantius, such high respect by his skill and good conduct, that Julian so far constrained himself as to retain him in the palace. Nay, the philosophic emperor even determined, after having been successful, here and there, in his zeal for making converts, to make an attempt upon Cæsarius also, and engaged for that purpose in a religious conversation with him. Unfortunately, Gregory thought it unnecessary to communicate the nature and details of that interview; he only remarks, that his brother defended his convictions before the emperor with equal christian truth and philosophic dexterity, and in the hearing of a large assembly declared, ‘that he was a Christian, and would always remain one.’ The emperor had sufficient toleration to retain him, nevertheless, in his society. The firmness of his court-physician, and the thought of the still greater christian zeal of his brother Gregory (afterwards to become so famous), only extorted from him the ejaculation, ‘*O happy father of two unhappy sons!*’ He had good reason to call the father happy who had begotten two such sons, but no less so the sons, whose religious convictions no external power could shake.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory, who was at that time living with his parents, was not a little anxious respecting the critical position of his brother in the imperial palace. He could not know, as yet, how firm his brother would be in the confession of his faith, but he could not but be well convinced that Julian would make every effort to overcome it. In this embarrassment, when he probably had no intelligence from his brother, and doubtful rumours concerning him might be in circulation, he wrote to him

---

<sup>1</sup> *Gregor. Orat. vii. 11, 12, 13, p. 205 et seq.*

a letter (*Epist.* 17, p. 779), of which this may be given as the chief purport: ‘We blush deeply, and are filled with grief on your account. All Christians, friends and enemies, are talking of you. At one moment they say, ‘Surely the son of a bishop will contend for the faith;’ at another, ‘He contends, but it is for honour and power;’ and again, ‘He is overcome by gold.’ How, then, can the bishops exhort others to constancy in the christian faith, when they cannot look with confidence to the members of their own families? How can I comfort our father, already weary of life? Our mother would be perfectly inconsolable, were she to hear of you what we have hitherto carefully concealed from her. Out of regard, therefore, for yourself and for us, come to a better determination. We have already—at least, for any one of a frugal mind, means sufficient to live respectably. But if you do not relinquish your present post, there remains for you only the melancholy choice, either, as being a genuine Christian, to be cast down to the lowest station, or to pursue your ambitious plans, but then to suffer damage in more weighty things, and expose yourself, if not to the fire, yet at least to the smoke.’

Soon after this, Cæsarius formed the resolution to retire into the bosom of his family, and he carried it into execution when Julian set out upon his Persian campaign.<sup>1</sup>

During Julian’s reign, Gregory also endeavoured to serve the christian cause by urgent exhortations addressed to distinguished individuals. Thus, among others, he wrote a very flattering letter<sup>2</sup> to Candianus, a relation by consanguinity, and the holder of an honour-

<sup>1</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* vii. 13, p. 207.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 181, p. 891 et seq.



able appointment, but who professed the heathen religion, not by way of homage to the fashion of the day, but in honest sincerity. The letter ends thus:—  
 ‘In return for all your friendship, I wish you not any increase of your power and your reputation, but only the *one* greatest thing of all,—that you would at length listen to us and God, that you might stand on the side of the persecuted, and not of the persecutors; for the benefit of the one passes away with the time, but the other imparts immortal happiness.’

The courageous bearing of Gregory’s aged father during the Julian persecution is also remarkable. The following particulars relating thereto have been preserved. Julian, to whom it must have been a great object to turn many a christian church into a temple for the gods, made with this view an experiment at Nazianzum. The imperial prefect of the province marched with a company of archers into the city, and demanded that the church should be given up to him.<sup>1</sup> His numerous retinue indicated an appeal to force. The bishop, however, who knew that he could reckon on the zealous support of the christian population, which was devoted to him, boldly resisted the demand; and the prefect found it advisable to withdraw, happy to escape thence without loss or damage.<sup>2</sup>

The following incident is still more important.<sup>3</sup> In

---

<sup>1</sup> Σημεῖον, οἱ τε τοξόται, καὶ ὁ τούτων στρατηγὸς, οὓς ἐπῆγεν ἐκεῖνος, τοῖς ἱεροῖς οἰκοῖς ἡμῶν, ὡς ἡ παραληψόμενος, ἡ καταστροφόμενος.

<sup>2</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* xviii. 22, p. 353, Gregory boasts of his father on this occasion, that he not only encouraged his people to stand firm in those bad days by word and deed, but also, to the ruin of his health, continued his prayers for the general welfare of the church, through whole nights.

<sup>3</sup> Gregor. *Orat.* xviii. 34, p. 355.

the year of our Lord 362, Eusebius, who held an imperial appointment, was, by means of a tumultuous popular election, named bishop in the chief city of Cappadocia. The assembled bishops of the province were compelled, against their wishes, to ratify the choice and consecrate him, but afterwards declared the whole proceeding invalid. Julian also opposed the choice, because he was sorry to lose a valuable public officer. The aged Gregory, although presiding over a small and unimportant bishopric, undertook to defend the choice of the people against the objections of the bishops<sup>1</sup> and the displeasure of the emperor. When the imperial deputy had summoned before him the bishops who had consecrated Eusebius, in order to settle the business agreeably to the wish of the emperor, the Bishop Gregory replied to him as follows:—‘Most noble governor,<sup>2</sup> in all that we have done we have but one Judge and King, and his authority is now assailed. He will also take cognizance of this episcopal consecration, which we have taken in hand in a legal manner, and well-pleasing to Him. If you are pleased to do us violence in any

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory Nazianzen thus gives his opinion on the matter: ‘The consecration was certainly compulsory, and therefore, as to the form, defective; but the choice proceeded from the devout sense of the people, and, in point of fact, fell upon a worthy man. If it were, however, opposed to the convictions of the bishops, they ought to have protested against it at the decisive moment, and even have resisted to the utmost, and not afterwards strive against it, and so increase the troubles of the Church in such dangerous times. Do they ask for indulgent consideration on the ground that they yielded to the pressure of circumstances?—this, surely, should much more be shown to Eusebius, who also was compelled to occupy the episcopal seat.’ *Orat.* xviii. 33, p. 354.

<sup>2</sup> Ὁ κράτιστε ἡγεμὼν,—as Felix and Festus are addressed; see Acts, xxiii. 26; xxiv. 3; xxvi. 25; and also Theophilus, to whom St. Luke dedicates his writings. St. Luke, i. 3.

other matter, you will find no difficulty; but this privilege no man can forbid us, to defend the propriety and justice of our proceeding. You cannot prohibit it by any law; and it ill becomes you in any manner to trouble yourself with our concerns.' The deputy was overcome by this manly address of the bishop; the emperor gave way; and the citizens of Cæsarea saw themselves not only delivered from the danger which the imperial displeasure had threatened, but also gratified by the fulfilment of their wishes.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### GREGORY AGAIN AS PEACE-MAKER.

WE must pause awhile at Cæsarea, where we find our Gregory again undertaking the business of a mediator. His bosom friend Basil had just then returned from the scene of his monastic life in Pontus, to Cæsarea, his native city; and, as had before happened to Gregory, was ordained priest, against his will, by the recently-elected bishop, Eusebius (this was probably in A.D. 363 or 364). This prelate, who, from the nature of his previous course of life, could not be very conversant with theological studies, wished to have about him a thoroughly-educated presbyter, who was well furnished for controversy. Such a person Basil had already shown himself by several of his writings. Whether the newly-ordained presbyter caused the bishop occasionally to feel his superiority in thinking and in speaking, or whether some other unpleasantness arose between them, certainly their good understanding did not last long;

and Eusebius, went so far,<sup>1</sup> under the influence of passion, as again violently to take away from the same person the priestly office which he had violently forced upon him. A hazardous proceeding! since the powerful and (when it was worth their while) pugnacious party of the monks were devoted, with all their energies, to Basil, the great promoter of monachism. A serious division in the community was almost unavoidable, had not Basil generously preferred a voluntary exile<sup>2</sup> in Pontus

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory speaks generally in high terms of Eusebius, and describes him as a pious man, and (especially in the persecution by Valens) very firm and courageous. He goes into detail on occasion of the disagreement between Eusebius and Basil; he throws the blame, however, upon the former, and remarks, that 'something common to man befel him in that affair': ἄπτεται γὰρ οὐ τῶν πολλῶν μονόν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἀρίστων ὁ Μῶμος.—*Orat.* xliii. 28, p. 792 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliii. 29, p. 793. Gregory himself had urgently counselled his friend to take this step—viz. to withdraw into retirement, and had even followed him thither: καὶ ἅμα συμβούλοις ἡμῖν περὶ τούτου χρησάμενος καὶ παραινέταις γνησίοις, φυγὰς ἐνθένδε συν ἡμῖν πρὸς τὸν Πόντον μεταχωρεῖ, καὶ τοῖς ἐκείσε φροντιστηρίοις ἐπιστατεῖ. By the way, the word φροντιστήριον is (as it is well known) employed by Aristophanes (*Nub.*, l. 94—ψυχῶν σοφῶν τοῦτ' ἐστὶ φροντιστήριον) in a playful manner in reference to the house or school of Socrates. Compare the expositors thereon, as collected by Beck, vol. ii. p. 74 et seq. Hesychius: φροντιστήριον. διατριβὴ καὶ οἶκημα Σωκράτους, καὶ τὸ σχολεῖον. In general, φροντιστήριον denotes a place where thought and meditation are strenuously exercised. As the christian monks were often designated philosophers, their place of residence might also (though often unsuitably enough) be named houses or schools of philosophy. Thence, Suidas (tom. iii. p. 634) says: φροντιστήριον. διατριβή, ἢ μοναστήριον ὅπερ οἱ Ἀττικοὶ σεμνεῖον καλοῦσι. In this sense Gregory also uses the word φροντιστήριον in the above-quoted passage; and he, who so readily represented the monks as philosophers, was probably the first writer who so applied it. Some further notices occur in Suicer. *Thes. Eccles.*, tom. ii. p. 1464. Gregorius Presbyter, in his *Life of Greg. Naz.*, also calls an hospital for the sick, φροντιστήριον ἀσθενῶν, πτωχῶν.



to a probably easy triumph over the bishop, who, from the nature of his election, did not stand on very firm footing. Gregory accompanied his friend into retirement, but appears to have returned soon to Nazianzum to the support of his aged father.<sup>1</sup>

From Nazianzum, also, Gregory could exert himself more effectually for the reconciliation of his friend Basil with the exasperated Bishop of Cæsarea; and amid the unfavourable circumstances of the time, a proper occasion happily soon presented itself for the attempt. Just at this time (that is to say, A.D. 364) danger seemed to threaten the orthodox party, when, after the short reign of Jovian, Valens, a favourer of Arianism, succeeded to the imperial throne. In the critical circumstances in which the orthodox bishops were placed by the bias of the new government, an able fellow-combatant must have been welcome to Eusebius. Such an one he had driven from him in the person of Basil. He now applied to Gregory, with the wish that he would come to Cæsarea and assist in their councils.<sup>2</sup> Gregory answered the bishop respectfully, but with a considerable degree of frankness (*Epist.* xx. p. 783), that he certainly felt greatly honoured by the invitation, but, notwithstanding this, he could not but consider the manner in

---

<sup>1</sup> It is possible, though to me, at least, not probable, that on this occasion also Gregory acted as a peace-maker in his native city; since the disagreement between his father and the monks (on account of his subscription to the Confession of Rimini) might have continued till now. To prevent, however, the fragmentary dissevering of the narrative, that which possibly belongs to this point of time has already been touched upon, in the account of that dissension.—See above, at p. 61 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> The words of Gregory (*Epist.* 20, p. 783) directly point to this: ἐγὼ χαίρω ὑπὸ σοῦ τιμώμενος—καὶ καλούμενος ἐπὶ τε συλλόγους καὶ συνόδους πνευματικούς.

which Eusebius had behaved, and still behaved, towards Basil, was unjust. ‘While you honour me,’ (he says among other things) ‘but treat him with contempt, you appear to me like a man who with one hand caresses the head, with the other inflicts a blow on the cheek of one and the same person; or who undermines the foundations of a house, and, at the same time, paints the walls and decorates the outside. If, therefore, I have any influence with you, you will prove it by being reconciled to Basil; and I consider it but reasonable that you should concede this to me. If you treat him with respect, you will experience the same from him.’ This address, in which certainly the submissive respect due to the metropolitan bishop is overpowered by affection for his friend, by no means produced any favourable impression upon Eusebius. He saw in it only the refractory arrogance of a young presbyter, and expressed himself to that effect in his reply to Gregory. He, in his turn, assured the bishop (*Epist.* 169, p. 877) ‘that he had intended to address him, not in a reproachful, but in a spiritual and philosophic manner;<sup>1</sup> that the higher position of the bishop does not take away the right of being open and candid with him; on the contrary, it would be worthy of a generous-minded person to listen with satisfaction rather to the free words of a friend, than to the flattery of an enemy. He hoped, therefore, he would again adopt a gentler bearing.’

This epistle, and especially the general distress of the orthodox Church under the Emperor Valens, appear to have succeeded better in softening, or at least in altering

---

<sup>1</sup> Οὐκ ὑβριστικῶς, ἀλλὰ πνευματικῶς τε καὶ φιλοσόφως. The last of these words may perhaps mean, ‘as it is allowed and is suitable to a christian philosopher, or an ascetic.’

the bishop's tone of mind. This is evident from a letter, written somewhat later by Gregory, and which ends with these words:—‘Well, then, if it is agreeable to you, I will come and pray with you, contend with you, serve with you, and will stimulate you for the combat by my acclamation, as their youthful partizans do to encourage the combatants in the games.’<sup>1</sup> Gregory expresses himself still more plainly concerning the altered temper of Eusebius, in an epistle to Basil (*Epist.* 19, p. 782), wherein he informs his friend that he would soon receive a conciliatory letter from his now friendly-minded bishop; but exhorts him, at the same time, to be beforehand with the bishop, and to go beyond his concession by a true generosity. With this view, he proposes to Basil that they should go together to Cæsarea, and, with united energies, contend against the false doctrines which were pressing in on all sides. In fact, Basil returned to Cæsarea in the year 365.

From that period, Basil continued on the most friendly understanding with his bishop; he became his counsellor, his stay, his right hand, in many respects even his teacher; he assisted him in all ways, and, whilst he thus made his services indispensable to him, he governed him also—and through the bishop, at the same time, governed the community. Gregory himself gives us very plainly to understand that, in those last years of his life (from 365 to 370), Eusebius was bishop only in name—Basil in fact.<sup>2</sup> Thus their mutual rela-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 170, p. 878. These last words are very striking, and full of meaning in the original: καὶ ὑπηρετησόμενοι, καὶ ὡς ἀλλοτρίην ἀρίστον κελευσται παῖδες, ταῖς ὑποφωνήσεσιν ὑπαλείψαντες.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory's excellent sketch is worth reading (*Orat.* xliii. 33, p. 796), where, among other things, he says of Basil: ‘He

tions worked well together, since Eusebius, still somewhat worldly-minded, and not properly educated for an ecclesiastical office, required an able clerical aid. But Basil was not only most worthy of high authority in the Church, but was also (as we shall see in the result) not averse from the exercise of that authority. He distinguished himself as a presbyter during a famine, when, both by word and deed, he showed himself a pattern for all the rich, and a blessing to the poor. (See *Orat.* xliii. 34, p. 797; and 63, p. 817). But still more (at least it was considered *by the majority* as the most weighty) did his steady efforts in defence of the Nicene Creed, during the Arian government of Valens, command admiration; so that, on the occasion of a vacancy in the Bishopric of Cæsarea, it was quite natural to regard him above all competitors in the choice of a successor.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

BASIL ELECTED BISHOP OF CÆSAREA : CONDUCT OF THE ELDER  
AND OF THE YOUNGER GREGORY ON THAT OCCASION.

THIS vacancy in the Bishopric of Cæsarea, caused by the death of Eusebius, took place A.D. 370. Basilius

---

exercised the chief power in the Church when he held only the second rank; and while he did all in a spirit of kindness, he gained universal respect and authority. The harmony, and at the same time the complicity, in this exercise of authority was something wonderful: *πλοκή τοῦ δύνασθαι*. The one led the people—the other, the leader. He was, in a measure, a lion-keeper (*λειοντοκόμος*), while by his tact he softened the temper of his superior. For, indeed, the latter required it, since he had not long been raised to the episcopal chair, and still breathed something of the air of the world.'



might well aspire to the primacy, since, when he was not far advanced in years, (he was at that time 41,) it was principally he, in concert with Gregory, who, if he had not prevented, yet had greatly checked the introduction of Arianism into his fatherland. He had also distinguished himself by his knowledge and pious zeal among the whole body of the clergy. It was, however, exactly these prominent qualities of Basil that rekindled envy against him. The power he had already exercised had been a thorn in the eyes of many; and when the election came on he met with violent opponents.<sup>1</sup> Basil, nevertheless, obtained his object; both the Gregorys, father and son, having especially exerted themselves for him—in characteristically different ways indeed, as we shall presently see.

After the death of Eusebius, Basil wrote an epistle<sup>2</sup> to Gregory, wherein he expresses the most ardent desire to see his friend, and thus proceeds:—‘On the death of Eusebius, no little fear has fallen upon me lest they, who for some time past have lain in wait against our Metropolitan Church, in order to fill it with the weeds of heresy, should take advantage of the present moment, and, by their vile doctrines, root up again the germs of piety that have been sown with much pains in the souls of the people, and sow the seeds of dissension, as they have already actually done in many Churches. But now, since letters have come to me from the clergy, requesting that I would not be inactive at this juncture, I was reminded (as I glanced around in thought upon my means of help) of your affection, of your genuine faith,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Greg. Orat.* xviii. 35, p. 356.

<sup>2</sup> It is given among the letters of Gregory, p. 836.

and the zeal which you always showed for the Church of God. I have therefore sent my fellow-labourer, Eustathius, for the purpose of exhorting you, a man so esteemed, to take part personally in the contest for the Churches, to gladden my age by your presence, to preserve for this excellent Church its reputation for piety inviolate, and to help, with me, to give that flock a shepherd after the Lord's own heart—one who would be able to guide his people aright. *I have in my eye a man whom you also know well; if we could but succeed in getting him, we might dare to be of good courage before God, and should bestow a great blessing upon the people.'*

It is not improbable that Basil had Gregory himself in his thoughts when he wrote these last words, and only chose to indicate it ambiguously, that he might the more certainly come to Cæsarea. However that might be, Gregory went not. We are rather obliged to conclude, from one of Gregory's letters, that Basil, on seeing the hesitation of his friend, wrote to him repeatedly; and, in order to stimulate him to the journey without gainsay, represented to him, that he would find him dangerously sick, and cherishing a longing desire to see him once more. Deeply affected, Gregory prepared himself for the journey. His lively imagination already pictured to him the form of his dying friend, and consoled him by suggesting monumental inscriptions in honour of the deceased. How astonished must he have been on hearing, soon after, that Basil was by no means seriously unwell! Notwithstanding all his friendly regard, as it were, a flash of suspicion shot through the mind of Gregory, that Basil wished to decoy him to Cæsarea by a false pretence, in order that his

election to the bishopric might be assisted by the zealous assistance of his friend. He therefore gave up all thought of the journey, and wrote his friend a letter<sup>1</sup> full of strong reproofs, in which he charged him plainly with dishonesty and folly; and he reminds him that he, Gregory, could not lawfully have taken part in the choice of a bishop. This epistle seems to have been too passionately written, since it is hardly credible that Basil should have entirely feigned an illness. It is probable, however, that he gave an exaggerated description of his almost always sickly condition. But was it really from ambitious views?—certainly the suspicion, which even his friend entertained, attaches to him.

Gregory, in thus withholding himself from all interference in the election of the bishop, followed the law of church order, of decorum, and of prudence. He even advised Basil to retire from the tumultuary excitement of the metropolis at the decisive moment. Meanwhile, however, he exerted himself indirectly for Basil, by the eloquent letters which he wrote in the name of his father to the clergy and laity of Cæsarea.<sup>2</sup> The elder Gregory, as a bishop of the province, was justly entitled to take a part in the choice of the metropolitan, but he felt himself too weak, from sickness and the infirmities of old age, to attend in person at the place of election. As, however, he felt interested for Basil in a high degree, he caused his voice and wishes to be heard, through his son, in two public missives. In the one<sup>3</sup> he says to the inhabitants of Cæsarea—‘If I am not able, overcome as I am by sickness, to attend at the election, yet will I

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 21, p. 784, with which compare *Orat.* xliii. 39, p. 800.

<sup>2</sup> *Greg. Epist.* 22, 23, pp. 785, 786.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 22, al. 18, p. 785.

contribute thereto as much as at this distance is practicable. I am well satisfied that there are others, also, who are worthy to preside over a Church so distinguished, and so admirably managed from the first; but there is *one* whom I must prefer to all others, one who is already so highly esteemed by yourselves, so beloved of God—our son, the presbyter Basilius, a man (I call God to witness) of unspotted life and sound doctrine; who, either alone of all the candidates, or at least very pre-eminently, is in both respects qualified to stand firm against the tendencies of the present time, and to contend against the prevailing false doctrines. I write this to the clergy, to the monks, and to those who are invested with high dignities, and members of the council, as well as to all the people.’ In the other epistle,<sup>1</sup> addressed to the electing bishops, and of similar contents, he, however, remarks that, at their urgent request, he would even come to Cæsarea, especially if he might presume to hope that their choice also would fall upon Basil. Having learnt soon after that, for the regular election of a bishop, the personal attendance of *one more* bishop was required, the old man actually tore himself from his sick-bed, and caused himself, in spite of his half-dead body, to be conveyed to Cæsarea.<sup>2</sup> He thereby very considerably promoted the elevation of Basil to the episcopate, and then returned to Nazianzum, strengthened by the effects of the journey, and the gratification of having succeeded in his object. When he set out from home, it was necessary to raise him, like a corpse, into the carriage; but when he came back, he

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 23, al. 19, p. 786.

<sup>2</sup> *Greg. Orat.* xviii. 36, p. 357; *Orat.* xliii. 37, p. 799.



sat upright, with cheerful eye, full of renovated, youthful strength. It is not, however, to be denied that, in the whole proceeding, the son conducted himself more correctly and prudently than the somewhat too-vehement, over-zealous father.

A certain degree of mistrust had already, during Basil's election, insinuated itself between the hitherto-devoted friends. Basil might imagine that his friend had not done everything for the promoting of his elevation, which the duty of friendship seemed to require; and Gregory suspected that he had been dishonestly treated by Basil. After Basil's election, Gregory wrote him a congratulatory letter<sup>1</sup>—a friendly letter certainly, but somewhat cool, compared with former letters. He therein informs the newly-elected bishop, that he would not visit him as yet, that he might not seem to obtrude himself upon him, and so provoke envy, (both of them having already to put up with envy and enemies enough,) and also least it should be thought that Basil intended to assemble all his friends and adherents about him.<sup>2</sup> When, however, Gregory soon after heard that Basil was already involved in difficulties and disputes, (probably with the temporal authorities,<sup>3</sup> who acted agreeably to the wishes of the Arian emperor,) he again wrote to him with the heartiness of old times, and promised him

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 24, al. 25, p. 787.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory expresses himself in pretty much the same terms on this occasion, in *Orat.* xliii. 39, p. 801.

<sup>3</sup> The opponents with whom Basil had to do were designated as *κρατούντες*, men in authority. Under that term probably is to be understood, generally, the dominant Arian party. Gregory says: *πυνθάνομαι σε—πράγματα ἔχειν ἀπὸ τινος σοφιστικῆς τῶν κρατούντων καὶ συνήθους περὶ ἐργίας· καὶ θανάσιμον οὐδέν· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἡγνόνουν τὸν φθονον, κ. τ. λ.*

an early visit, in order either to give him counsel and consolation, or at least to be a sympathizing witness of his patience and courageous efforts.<sup>1</sup>

Nevertheless, the good understanding between them was not thereby fully re-established; rather, an occasion now first arose for a still more painful interruption of it. The province of Cappadocia had hitherto formed a whole, as well in civil as in ecclesiastical relations; the chief civil officer was, ordinarily, the imperial deputy, residing in Cæsarea; the first ecclesiastic, the bishop of Cæsarea. About this time the Emperor Valens divided Cappadocia into two provinces, one of which had Cæsarea, and the other Tyana, for its chief city.<sup>2</sup> Anthimus, the bishop of Tyana, a worldly-minded, ambitious man, laid claim to the same ecclesiastical dignity as was granted

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 25, al. 26, p. 788.

<sup>2</sup> Cappadocia had hitherto formed *one* province, which again, according to an ancient distribution, originating with the Cappadocian kings, was subdivided into six strategies, or military governments. Valens, from financial motives (A.D. 371), divided the country into *two* provinces, Cappadocia Prima et Secunda. As to the strategies, we hear no more of them. Cæsarea continued the chief city of the First Cappadocia; the capital of the Second became Tyana, the largest Cappadocian city next to Cæsarea, and celebrated as the birth-place of the thaumaturge, Apollonius. The old city of Cæsarea (once distinguished, under the name of Mazaka, as the seat of government under the Cappadocian kings, and still, even now, the most respectable city of the country, under the name of Kaiserie) must naturally have suffered severely in having ceased to be the capital of the *whole* province. The inhabitants therefore, though without success, applied to the government through their bishop, Basil, to put a stop to this separation. Basil. M. *Epist.*, 74, 75, 76, p. 168 et seq. As far as concerns the ecclesiastical division, Basil might with more reason have appealed to the hitherto-existing constitution of the Cappadocian Church, with the view of continuing in the ecclesiastical possession of the *whole* province; since it was by no means necessary that every political metropolis should also become an ecclesiastical one.

to Cæsarea, and declared himself to be the legitimate Metropolitan of the Second Cappadocia. Basil, the bishop of Cæsarea, on the other hand, would not give up aught of his ancient rights, and insisted that the civil division of the province could not properly be applied to ecclesiastical relations. (Greg. *Orat.* xliii. 58, p. 813.) During the melancholy contentions<sup>1</sup> about this point, (which occasionally degenerated, on the part of Anthi-

---

<sup>1</sup> It might be presumed that, in these disputes between Anthimus and Basil, Arianism and Catholicism also came into play. But it is a question, first of all, whether Anthimus was an Arian. And, singularly enough, he is with the same confidence called an Arian by Le Clerc (*Bibl. Univers.* t. xviii. p. 60), as he is described as a Catholic by Baronius (*Acta Sanctor. Maj.*, t. ii. p. 394.) Qui (Anthimus) licet se Catholicum esse profiteretur, tamen nullius frugi vir erat. Neither of these learned men adduces any grounds for his opinion. We must therefore endeavour to deduce a right conclusion from Gregory's expressions. If we consider, then, for this purpose, the principal passage in Greg. *Orat.* xliii. 58, pp. 813, 814, we might, at first sight, suppose it favoured Le Clerc's opinion; since Gregory relates, that many bishops went over from Basil to Anthimus because they did not harmonize in their convictions with the former (τῷ τῆς πίστεως λόγῳ); and Anthimus himself, on the occasion of his withholding certain revenues belonging to Basil, observed: 'we ought not to pay tribute to heretics (μὴ χορῆναι δασμοφορεῖν κακοδόξοις).' But we must not overlook—1st, that it is nowhere explained why Anthimus and his party considered Basil heterodox; 2ndly, may it not probably have been, because (particularly in relation to the dogma of the Holy Ghost) he did not seem to them perfectly and logically of Nicene orthodoxy? To their hyper-orthodoxy Basil might not have been orthodox enough (compare Gregor. Naz. *Epist.* 26, pp. 788, 789); 3rdly, Gregory himself affirms, that the dogma and the care for the salvation of the soul served only for a pretext, while the real motives of the dispute on the side of Anthimus had been ambition and avarice; 4thly, had Anthimus been opposed to Basil because he (Anthimus) was an Arian, Gregory would hardly have omitted to mention this expressly, since he never wholly passes over, in his autobiography, anything that relates to the Arian contest; 5thly, some years later, after the settling of these ecclesiastical differences, Basil again entered into friendly relations with Anthimus (Basil. M. *Epist.* 210, p. 316), which he never would have done with an Arian;—all

mus,<sup>1</sup> into acts of violence and robbery,) Basil, in order to assert by the act his metropolitan claim, and to strengthen his party, instituted several new bishoprics in the smaller cities of Cappadocia; among others, in the little town of Sasima, situated between Nazianzum and Tyana, thirty-two miles from the former place, not quite so far from the latter, and properly belonging to the province of Tyana. This new bishopric now actually became a stone of offence in its influence on the friendship of Basil and Gregory.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

GREGORY BECOMES BISHOP OF SASIMA; AND AFTERWARDS  
COADJUTOR TO HIS FATHER AT NAZIANZUM.

BASIL had fifty bishops\* under him; to one of these of the lowest pretensions, or to some more unimportant presbyter, he might have transferred the new bishopric;<sup>2</sup>

---

these considerations make it highly probable to me that Anthimus was not an Arian.

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Epist.* 31, al. 22, p. 796, where it would seem that the language is not to be taken as a mere metaphor, when Gregory denominates Anthimus as Ἀρήϊος (warlike), and assures him that 'he, for his part, had no desire to carry weapons, or wage war.' To this he adds: ἡμῖν δὲ ἀντὶ πάντων δοῦναι τὴν ἡσυχίαν. τί γὰρ δεῖ μάχεσθαι περὶ γαλαθηνῶν, καὶ ὀρνιθῶν, καὶ τοῦτο ἄλλοτριῶν ὡς δῆτα περὶ ψυχῶν καὶ κανόνων; Gregory (*Orat.* xliii. 58, p. 814) relates a decided case where Anthimus (under the pretence that we ought to pay no tributes to heretics) sequestered the revenues of Basil, which had been brought to Cæsarea through the province of Tyana, on their way from the mountain range of Taurus; and that, at the same time, he took possession by force and robbery of the mule belonging to Basil.

\* In the German, 'Landbischöfe'—country or rural bishops, like the χωρεπίσκοπος, subsequently mentioned.—*Translator.*

<sup>2</sup> Greg. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 437:

Τούτοις (sc. Σασίμοις) μ' ὁ πεντήκοντα χωρεπισκόποις  
Στενοῦμενος δέδωκε . . . . .



for the appointment was of a kind which seemed suited to an individual who could not possibly have any claims or expectations elsewhere. Independent of the fact, that the little town was a bone of contention between the two chief bishops of Cappadocia, it was most disagreeably situated, in a melancholy, arid, waterless tract of country. In this unproductive neighbourhood, men breathed everywhere only dust. Three high roads here crossed each other, a circumstance which brought thither troops of waggoners and soldiers, and, consequently, incessant noise and quarrelling.<sup>1</sup> Of the inhabitants of this little town very few were, properly speaking, domiciled there; the greatest number, as waggoners and the like, led a

---

<sup>1</sup> Such is the picture given us by Gregory Nazianzen himself, *Carm. de Vita sua*, l. 439, 446, pp. 7, 8; and by Gregory Presbyter, in *Vita Gregor. Naz.* p. 139, of the situation and circumstances of Sasima. The former says:

Σταθμὸς τις ἔστιν ἐν μέσῃ λεωφόρῳ

τῆς καππαδοκῶν, ὅς σχίζετ' εἰς τρισσὴν ὁδόν.

"Ἀνδρὸς, ἄχλους, οὐ δόλως ἐλεύθερος, (οὐδ' ὁλῶς? *Trans.*)

Δεινῶς ἀπευκτὸν καὶ στενὸν κωμῶδριον.

Κόνης τὰ πάντα, καὶ ψόφοι, συν ἄρμασι,

Θρῆνοι, στεναγμοί, πράκτορες, στρέβλαι, πέδαι,

Λαὸς δ' ὅσοι ξένοι τε καὶ πλανώμενοι.

Αὕτη Σασίμων τῶν ἐμῶν ἐκκλησία.

Gregory Presbyter thus describes Sasima: πρὸς δὲ καὶ τὸ χωρίον, τὰ Σάσιμα λέγω, ἦν αὐτῷ ἀνεπιτήδειον, οἷα ζάλῃς τε καὶ ἀστικῶν φορύβων πεπληρωμένον· λεωφόρον γὰς βασιλικῆς μέσον κείμενον καὶ τοῦ δημοσίου ὁρόμου ἔχον τὰ ἵπποστάσια δονεῖται τοῖς παροῦσι, πολλὴν μὲν ἀνίαν φέρον τοῖς ἡσυχίοις, ἀπόλανσιν δὲ ἢ ὀφέλειαν. οὐδὲ τὴν τυχοῦσαν σχεδὸν παρεχόμενον. Sasima was twenty-four miles, or a moderate day's journey, from Nazianzum; thirty-two from Tyana, or a very long day's journey.—*Itiner. Antonini*, p. 144; *Itinerar. Hieros.*, p. 577. It was about the same distance from Cæsarea. Paul Lucas, an European traveller, at the beginning of the eighteenth century, thinks that the modern city of Ingesu (Inschesu)—a city with a respectable citadel, and some important remains of antiquity—occupies the site of the ancient Sasima. See Mannert's *Geogr. of the Greeks and Romans*, vol. vi. 2nd part, pp. 269, 270.

wandering sort of life. They would therefore probably be persons on whom spiritual labourers could not hope to make much impression. And, lastly (as Gregory does not omit to mention),<sup>1</sup> the revenues of this wretched place were so limited, that a bishop might not always have been in a condition to exercise the virtues of benevolence and hospitality, so essential to his character.

Now in this melancholy place Basil wished to place his friend Gregory, though he had always declined to accept any ecclesiastical office,<sup>2</sup> and at all events might have been thought worthy (according to ordinary judgment) of a more respectable bishopric. Could Basil, after having reached the summit of spiritual power in his native city, have intended, in this offer, to mortify a little the friend of his youth, for not having supported him, according to his wishes, at the critical moment of the episcopal election? Gregory certainly so took it. He saw in this conduct of Basil unfriendly pride and spiritual arrogance,<sup>3</sup> and could not for a long time entirely forgive him, for obtruding upon him this insignificant bishopric.<sup>4</sup> The new Metropolitan of Cæsarea had, however, other, though not very reasonable motives for forcing his friend, above all others, into this appoint-

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, l. 468, p. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Basil, on his first meeting with his friend Gregory as Bishop of Cæsarea, had offered him the first place among his presbyters — τὴν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων προτίμησιν, but Gregory had declined it. — *Gregor. Orat.* xliii. 39, p. 801.

<sup>3</sup> *Greg. Epist.* 31, al. 22, p. 795. He says, among other things, to Basil: 'I see the motive of this proceeding, in your transferring me to the episcopal chair, which has at once placed you above me. He then remarks that Basil's conduct was generally and severely censured. Some strong expressions on the part of Gregory on this point occur in *Epist.* 33, al. 24, p. 797.

<sup>4</sup> *Gregor. Carm. de Vit. sua*, lines 386—486, pp. 7, 8.

ment. It was one of the places, about the spiritual supervision of which the Bishops of Cæsarea and Tyana were contending; and Basil, doubtless, thought he could not maintain his rights more certainly than by placing in this post a highly respected individual, and entirely devoted to his interests. For this purpose, Gregory seemed to him the best qualified. So far was he from wishing to mortify his friend in this matter, or looking upon it in that light, that he rather considered Gregory's conduct in resisting his requisition as an instance of wilful coldness and indolence.<sup>1</sup> Thus the two friends were for a long time estranged, whilst neither of them was sufficiently self-denying to enter candidly into the views and motives of the other.

Basil actually came to Nazianzum for the purpose of consecrating Gregory as Bishop of Sasima.<sup>2</sup> The united entreaties of his father and his friend at length overcame Gregory, and he accepted the appointment, disagreeable as it was to him. The discourse which he delivered on this occasion (probably in the church at Nazianzum), in the presence of his father and several other bishops, begins with these words:—‘Once more in the rite of consecration has the Holy Spirit been poured out upon me, and once more I enter upon my calling sad and downcast.’ He then confesses that the call of the Spirit had terrified rather than cheered him, and that he might have required some time to recover from the surprise. He was ready, however, to surrender himself to the

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregor. *Epist.* 32, al. 23, p. 796: 'Εγκαλεῖς ἡμῶν ἀργίαν καὶ ῥαθυμίαν, ὅτι μὴ τὰ σὰ Σάσιμα κατειλήφαμεν, μηδὲ ἐπισκοπῶς κινούμεθα. Compare also Gregory's 31st and 32nd *Epist.*, pp. 795—797, in relation to the whole matter.

<sup>2</sup> Greg. *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 386, p. 7.

demands of the Spirit, and would devote himself entirely to promote the benefit of the community.<sup>1</sup>

The untoward circumstances under which Gregory was appointed bishop of Sasima soon showed their natural result. Anthimus of Tyana would not acknowledge the election, and expressed himself with much harshness against Gregory. He even came thereupon to Nazianzum, attended by some bishops, under the pretence of visiting Gregory the father, but, in fact, to bring over the son, by soft or harsh words, by flattery, or by threats, to acknowledge him as his metropolitan. But Anthimus was obliged to give up the matter as a failure, and was in such a state of irritation at his departure, that he reproached the younger Gregory as a traitor to the interests of the Church.<sup>2</sup> Still, at last, Anthimus wished to make use of him as a mediator between him and Basil, by consenting to which, Gregory again got into difficulties with Basil; so that the unfortunate bishop of Sasima could at last find no escape, till, full of disgust at these ecclesiastical irregularities

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* ix. pp. 234—238. Among other things, Gregory, at p. 237, even says: οὐκ ἐπίσθημεν, ἀλλ' ἐβιάσθημεν, we were not persuaded, but forced. Among his *Orations*, Nos. 9, 10, 11 relate principally to his temporary Bishopric of Sasima. In the 10th *Orat.* § 4, p. 241, is an interesting passage on the usage of episcopal consecration: Διὰ τοῦτο (he says to Basil, who consecrated him,) εἰς μεσον ἄγεις, καὶ ὑποχωροῦντος λαμβάνη, καὶ παρὰ σεαυτὸν καθίζεις—διὰ τοῦτο χρίεις ἀρχιερέα, καὶ περιβάλλεις τὸν ποδήρη, καὶ περιτίθης τὴν κίδαριν, καὶ προσάγεις τῷ θυσιαστηρίῳ τῆς πνευματικῆς ὁλοκαυτώσεως, καὶ θύεις τὸν μόσχον τῆς τελειώσεως, καὶ τελειοῖς τὰς χεῖρας τῷ πνεύματι, καὶ εἰσάγεις εἰς τὰ ἅγια τῶν ἁγίων ἐποπτεύοντα.

<sup>2</sup> *Greg. Epist.* 33, p. 797. Gregory thus describes the result of this undertaking on the part of Anthimus: τέλος, ἀπῆλθεν ἄπρακτος, πολλὰ περιπνεύσας, καὶ Βασιλισμὸν ἡμῖν, ὡς φιλιππισμὸν ἐγκαλέσας. Just as, in Greece, men accused certain individuals, and even the Delphic Oracle, of being gained over by



and divisions, he made his escape into solitary retirement.

It is indeed a matter of doubt whether Gregory ever actually betook himself to Sasima, and entered upon the discharge of episcopal duties there. It is nowhere expressly mentioned.<sup>1</sup> And, in point of fact, a doubt may be entertained as to the validity of the election, inasmuch as it rested upon Basil alone, and had not received full power and sanction, either from a declaration of the provincial bishops, or from the christian community at Sasima.

It is generally assumed that the only reason for which Gregory gave up this bishopric was mortified ambition; and he himself has given occasion for this view of his conduct, while he speaks so contemptuously of Sasima, as if it were quite beneath his dignity to go thither as bishop; certainly a very un-evangelical sentiment, if it were the sole motive of his evasion. Let us not, however, overlook his solemn asseverations, that, from his deeply-rooted inclination to a calm, contem-

---

bribes to the party of Philip of Macedon, and against the interests of the free fatherland; so here Anthimus charges Gregory with treason to the rights of the Church from partiality to Basil. The former conduct was called Philippizing (Φιλιππιζειν, Φιλιππισμός) —the latter, by analogy, Basilizing (Βασιλιζειν, Βασιλισμός). In like manner were formed other Greek words of older and later date—*e.g.* Κυψελίζειν, Κασανδρίζειν, Αντιγονίζειν, Σελευκίζειν. Consult, on this point, Valkenarii, *Orat.* iii.; Lugd., *Batav.* 1784, p. 254 et seq; Reiskii, *Inex Græcit; Demosth.* p. 785 et seq.

<sup>1</sup> The following passage in his *Carm. de Vita sua* (line 530, p. 9), seems rather to prove just the contrary:

Τῆς μὲν δοθείσης οὐ δόλως ἐκκλησίας\*  
 Προσεψάμην, οὐδ' ὅσον λατρείαν μίαν  
 Προσενεγκεῖν, ἢ συνεύξασθαι λαῶ,  
 Ἡ χεῖρα θεῖναι κληρικῶν ἐνὶ γέ τῳ.

\* Here again I suggest οὐδ' ὁλῶς instead of οὐ δόλως and προσηψάμην instead of προσεψάμην.—*Translator.*

plative life, he at that time experienced an inward opposition when he thought of undertaking an ecclesiastical office, with all its various duties; an opposition which, in this case, must have amounted almost to a feeling of horror, when he reflected that that office would at the same time involve him in the disputes of two jealous bishops. This disinclination towards ecclesiastical, active employment, ought not to be called mere indolence: a fondness for solitude and contemplation was innate in him, and had been confirmed by education. He might, perhaps, have overcome it, had not the prevailing idea of the age at the same time pointed out to him the life which so entirely harmonized with his natural bias, as also the most honourable and the holiest. And, lastly, *we* at least may ask: Was not Gregory, then, worthy of a more distinguished post than this poor, unquiet bishopric, doomed as it was to be an apple of discord? Could he not work more effectively at some other place than at a mere outpost against Anthimus, among the rough inhabitants of Sasima?

From this see of Sasima, Gregory had escaped to a solitary mountain range.<sup>1</sup> His father persecuted him with most urgent entreaties to take possession of the post assigned to him. The son steadily resisted.<sup>2</sup> But when now his aged father suppliantly besought him to come to Nazianzum, and share the episcopal duties there

---

<sup>1</sup> This he tells us in *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 490, p. 8:

Πάλιν φυγὰς τις καὶ ὁρομαῖος εἰς ὄρος,  
Κλέπτων φίλην δίαίταν, ἐντρύφημ' ἐμόν.

On the contrary, Gregory Presbyter (in his *Life of Greg. Naz.*, p. 139) says that he took refuge in a *φροντιστήριον ἀσθενῶν*. What historical grounds he had for this we have no means of judging, though both declarations are capable of being reconciled.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 495, p. 8.

with him, Gregory could no longer resist the appeal of paternal love.<sup>1</sup> His presence was the more necessary to his father, since, under the rule of Valens (who, shortly before, had made a violent attack on the orthodox Churches<sup>2</sup> of those eastern parts), there was so much of struggle and contention.<sup>3</sup> Gregory therefore (A.D. 372) returned to his old connexions, and at his entrance into the Church there, delivered a remarkable oration, which very clearly represents to us his then tone of thought: ‘Come to my assistance,’ he says to his audience, ‘for I

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, lines 497—525, pp. 8, 9.

<sup>2</sup> Cappadocia, under the influence of distinguished teachers, remained true to the Nicene creed, so that Gregory could say with reason, that that country was generally regarded as a pillar of the faith (πίστωος ἔρεισμα).—*Carm. adv. Episc.*, l. 94, p. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Valens, after he had already succeeded too well, made a very remarkable attack (towards the end of the year 371) upon the orthodox Churches of Cappadocia, especially upon the chief city, Cæsarea, in order forcibly to compel them to adopt the Arian creed. He feared to encounter a specially powerful resistance from the courage and zeal of Basil, and had therefore put off the struggle with him to the last. We have some interesting accounts of this contest (though previously requiring much critical correction) from the pens of eye-witnesses, and they agree in showing that Basil at last came off victorious. Gregory of Nazianz. (*Orat.* xliii. 47, p. 805 et seq.), Gregory of Nyssa (*advers. Eunom.*, lib. i. t. ii. p. 313), and, with some variation, Theodoret, iv. 19; Socrates, iv. 26; Sozomenus, vi. 16. Although Gregory was at Cæsarea during this contest, and helped to support his friend, yet no particular details of his exertions at that time are preserved to us. He only tells us that, when Valens had signed the order for the banishment of Basil, (which order, however, was never carried into execution,) he was prepared to accompany his friend into exile.—*Orat.* xliii. 54, p. 809. The narrative, as a whole, belongs certainly to the *Life of Basil*, and forms one of the brightest parts thereof. As Valens was on his march to Cæsarea, or on his return from it, he tried to gain the upper hand for Arianism at Nazianzum also; but he encountered a vigorous resistance there also, on the part of the elder and the younger Gregory. Unfortunately, this is only touched upon in general terms by Gregory.—*Orat.* xviii. 37, p. 358.

am almost torn in pieces by an inward longing, struggling with the call of the Spirit. *That longing* urges me to flight, to the solitude of the mountains, to repose of soul and body, to the withdrawal of the mind from all objects of sense, and to a retirement into myself, in order to converse uninterruptedly with God, and to be thoroughly penetrated by the bright beams of his Spirit . . . . But his *Holy Spirit* strives to bring me into active life, in order to promote the common good, and promote my own interest by promoting that of others, to spread the light of the Gospel, and to bring unto God 'a peculiar people' (Titus, ii. 14), a holy nation, a royal priesthood' (1 Peter, ii. 9), and to restore in many his image in renovated purity. For as a whole garden is more than a single plant; as the whole heaven, with all its beauties, is more glorious than one only star, and the whole body is superior to one of its members—so also, before God, the whole well-regulated Church is better than a well-ordered individual; and we ought always 'to mind not only our own things, but also the things of others.' This is what Christ himself has done, who, though he might have continued in the enjoyment of his own dignity in his divine nature, not only lowered himself to the form of a servant, but also, despising the shame, submitted to death upon the cross, that by his passion he might blot out our sins, and by his death destroy death.' In the sequel of the discourse, the orator explains how it seems to him the safest way to allow something to that longing after contemplative solitude, and yet to follow the suggestions of that Spirit which had stirred him up, and was drawing him to the duties of active life. With this view, he would neither shun altogether the holy service of the Church, nor yet take



on himself a burthen which his shoulders might not be able to bear. He therefore professes himself ready to share the superintendence of the Church with his father; while he modestly adds, that he would endeavour to follow the path of that powerful, high-soaring eagle, as became a not dissimilar descendant.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### MISFORTUNES IN THE FAMILY OF GREGORY.

THE thread of the narrative has thus far been purposely continued, in order that the occurrences just related might stand in their true and unbroken connexion. But we must now again turn back our view, and, for the sake of completeness, fill up some omissions in his family history. We have to say something, first of all, respecting the brother of Gregory.

Cæsarius had, as we have related, retired from court to the bosom of his family, on Julian's commencement of the Persian campaign. After Julian's death, however, he returned to the palace, and was loaded with honours by the two successive emperors, Jovian and Valens.<sup>1</sup> The latter even gave him a state appointment, probably the treasurership of Bithynia.<sup>2</sup> The city of Nicæa, where he

---

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Orat.* vii. 14, p. 207.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory thus expresses himself on the occasion: Διέτριβε μὲν ἐν τῇ Βιθυνῶν, τὴν οὐ πολλοστίην ἀπὸ βασιλέως διέπων ἀρχήν. ἥ δὲ ἦν ταμιεύειν βασιλεῖ τὰ χρήματα, καὶ τῶν θησανρῶν ἔχειν τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν.—*Orat.* vii. 15, p. 207. Gothofredus and Tillemont have both made farther researches concerning the office held by Cæsarius. See, by the latter, *Mémoire*, p. 5, à l'*Histoire Eccles.*, t. ix. p. 700 et seq., and Fabricius, *Bibl. Gr.*, vol. viii. p. 436, edit. Harl.

resided, was (A.D. 368) visited, and in a great measure destroyed, by a fearful earthquake, the most violent that had ever been remembered. Cæsarius was one of the few inhabitants who saved their lives, yet not without personal injury and a considerable loss of property.<sup>1</sup> Gregory and Basil took advantage of this occasion to persuade one so dear to them, and one who had just been delivered from impending death, to renounce a worldly life and the service of the State altogether, and to live in retirement for his soul's health only.<sup>2</sup> Cæsarius also felt convinced that divine aid had rescued him from the danger, and resolved to devote the rest of his life to the God who had protected him. But soon after, as he was intending to return into private life, in order to carry out that resolution, a mortal sickness surprised him, in the year 368, or in the beginning of 369.<sup>2</sup> He had, however, been baptized shortly before his death. Gregory lost in his brother an affectionate friend, and had been, in return, revered by Cæsarius as a father.<sup>3</sup> They had been reciprocally serviceable to each other: Cæsarius had always removed as much as possible from Gregory the cares and troubles of external life; and, in his turn, received from him higher and spiritual benefits. The pain

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 15, p. 207. *Carmen de Reb. suis*, line 174, p. 34.

Χρήματα δ' ὅσσ' ἐπέστατο, τὰ μὲν λάβε γαῖα χαροῦσα\*  
Νικαίης βρασμοῖσιν ὅτ' ἤριπεν, κ. τ. λ.

<sup>2</sup> *Gregor. Epist.* 19, al. 50, p. 778. *Basil. M. Epist.* 26, iii. p. 105.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* vii. 15, p. 208.

---

\* As ἐπέστατο will not scan, it was probably written ὅσσα ἐκτατο, from κτάσμαι.—*Translator.*

which the death of Cæsarius occasioned Gregory<sup>1</sup> was heightened still more by the circumstances which attended it. The unmarried Cæsarius had bequeathed all his property, probably of considerable value, to the poor.<sup>2</sup> Gregory, when he wished to execute his brother's last wishes, found that certain artful persons had gotten possession of the property. He complains thereof very touchingly in an epistle (among others) addressed to the governor, Sophronius,<sup>3</sup> of whom he demands help and justice. 'The excellent and accomplished Cæsarius,'<sup>4</sup> (he says,) 'who once had so many friends, and was also a friend of yours, lies now in death,

<sup>1</sup> He gives strong utterance to this grief in two of his poems—*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 368, p. 6 ; and *Carm. de Reb. suis*, line 203, p. 35.

<sup>2</sup> The will of Cæsarius, as to the disposal of his property, ran thus : τὰ ἐμὰ πάντα βούλομαι γινεσθαι τῶν πτωχῶν.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* xviii. al. 32, p. 718.

<sup>4</sup> It is well known that a collection of theological and philosophical questions, in four dialogues, (*Dialogi* iv. sive *Quæstiones Theolog. et Philosoph.*, cxlv.,) is attributed to Cæsarius, who, according to the testimony of his brother Gregory, (see particularly Gregor. *Carm.* 58, in *Muratorii Anecd. Gr.*, p. 53,) was not only a distinguished physician, but also a man of general scientific information. The book is still in existence, being printed in the Latin edition of *Gregory's Works*, by Leunclave and Billius ; in Latin, in the *Auctuarium Biblioth. Patr.*, Paris, 1624 ; in Greek and Latin, edited by Fronto Ducæus ; and several times since (e.g. *Biblioth. Patr.*, Paris, 1644 ; tom. xi.). Now, although Suidas (sub voce, Καϊσάριος) mentions Cæsarius as the author of a work, κατὰ Ἑλλήνων, and Photius (*Bibl. Cod.* 210) still more decidedly ascribes the celebrated theological and philosophical questions to him, yet most critical inquirers of a later date have agreed in denying, from internal evidence, the claim of Cæsarius to that work. See Tillemont, *Mém.*, t. ix. p. 701 ; Oudin in *Comment. de Scriptor. Eccles. Antiq.*, tom. i. p. 543 ; Cave, *Hist. Liter.*, vol. i. p. 249 ; Schröekh, *Th.* 13, p. 317 ; and the very complete literary notices in Fabricii, *Biblioth. Gr.*, vol. viii. p. 435, edit. Harl. A remarkable edition of these *Quæstiones* was published by Elias Ehniger, Augsburg, 1626.

friendless, forsaken, an object of pity, hardly thought worthy of a little myrrh, or, if that be bestowed upon his corpse, scarcely covered with a miserable shroud. Truly it is a great thing, if even thus much of compassion is shown to him! His enemies, however, have (as I hear) fallen upon him, and have violently torn to pieces his property among themselves, or are on the point of doing so; and there is no one to restrain them. I beseech you, then, do not tolerate such doings, but rather share in our grief and anger, and approve yourself as indeed a friend of the deceased Cæsarius! What effects this epistle produced, as, indeed, what was the general issue of the affair, is unknown to us.<sup>1</sup>

When, at a subsequent time, the earthly remains of Cæsarius were transferred to the tombs of the martyrs, even his mother, Nonna, joined the procession, not in robes of mourning, but in the white garments of festive joy.<sup>2</sup> She thus acknowledged the christian import of death as a birth into a higher state of existence, and drowned her grief in holy songs and psalms. For the alleviation of his own grief, and in order to honour the memory of the deceased, Gregory, on this occasion, dedicated to his brother a laudatory oration,<sup>3</sup> from which we extract some of those passages which, perhaps, gave especial occasion for the honour paid to Cæsarius as one of the saints.<sup>4</sup> He vows to his brother's memory an

<sup>1</sup> Farther notices of this occur in Tillemont's *Mémoires pour servir à l'Hist. Eccles.*, book ix. p. 377 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* vii. 15, p. 208. . . . . μητρὸς λαμπροφορίᾳ τῇ πάθει τὴν εὐσέβειαν ἀντεισαγοούσης . . . .

<sup>3</sup> It is the 7th *Oration* (so often already quoted), at p. 198 to p. 216 of the Benedictine edition. See, moreover, Gregory's *Poem*, addressed to his brother, in Muratori's *Græc. Anecd.*, p. 49.

<sup>4</sup> Not our Gregory alone, but also *all the members of his family*, were honoured by the Catholic Church as saints. The Greek



annual festival, so long as any one of the family should live; and then proceeds:<sup>1</sup> ‘But thou, O holy and heavenly spirit, canst walk at large in heaven, and repose in that bosom of Abraham, in which that intermediate happiness consists. Thou art permitted to see the well-ordered ranks of angels, and the radiant splendour of departed saints; or rather, thou canst thyself join their joyous choirs, and rejoice with them, looking down with a smile upon all things here below; upon the so-called riches of the world, its cast-off honours, its delusive glory; upon the seductive pleasures of sense; upon the stormy scene of life, with its confusion and uncertainty, like a battle by night; upon all this thou canst smile, while thou standest by the side of the great King, and art illuminated by the light which beameth forth from Him. O that even here we might catch some slight ray from that divine light (as far as can be seen in this frail mirror and its faint representations) till we one day attain to the source of eternal good, and with purged sense recognising the pure truth, shall there receive that

---

Church keeps the anniversary of Gregory, as one of her chief saints, on the 25th of January. The Latin Church departed capriciously therefrom, while it celebrated his memory, now on the 11th, now on the 13th of January, and sometimes on the 19th of March, till at last it was transferred to the 9th of May, which the *Martyrologium Romanum* also gives as his birthday. The anniversary of his father, Gregory, is on the 1st of January; of the mother, Nonna, on the 5th of August; of Cæsarius, on the 25th of February; of Gorgonia, on the 9th of December. See the *Acta Sanctor. Major.*, tom. ii. pp. 369, 370. Would that the memory of such a family were honoured as holy in such a sense by every one, that he might seek to nourish *in himself* the truly christian spirit which animated them, without being drawn away in any relation by the honour thus paid to imperfect human virtue, from the holy source of all good—from Him, that is, who *alone* is good!

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 17, p. 209.

more perfect possession, and that purer view of Good, as a reward for our pains and efforts in pursuit of it here below. For this it is, which the Scriptures and those who are most conversant with divine things hold out to us as the end and object of our christian initiation.<sup>1</sup>

About the same time, or somewhat later, Gregory lost also his sister Gorgonia, whom in like manner he honoured, after her death, with a laudatory oration.<sup>2</sup> He delineates to us this diligent housewife and pious Christian in a manner entirely resembling the character of his mother. We content ourselves (while we refer our readers to the more complete description of her in the funeral discourse) with giving, in lieu of all else, a short narrative of her death, which at once proved how she had walked with God. She had long before felt a desire 'to depart and be with Jesus.' This longing for death produced in her a presentiment of its approach, and (as Gregory relates) even a distinct anticipation of the time when it would take place.<sup>3</sup> Although her whole life had been a continued course of sanctification, yet, according to the custom of the age, she did not receive the outward sign thereof—baptism—till near the close of her life. When the day approached on which she had anticipated her death, she prepared herself as for a festival, assembled round her bed her husband, her children, and friends, and, after cheering conversation upon a better state of existence, took leave of them. All of them (even her aged mother) stood in silent sorrow round her dying bed.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vii. 17, p. 209 : — ὅπερ δὴ τῆς ἡμετέρας τέλος μυσταγωγίας βίβλοι τε καὶ ψυχὰι θεολόγοι θεσπίζουσιν.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* viii. p. 218 : Εἰς τὴν ἀδελφὴν ἑαυτοῦ Γοργονίαν ἐπιτάφιος.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* viii. 19—23, pp. 230—232.

It was as if some holy solemnity were being celebrated.<sup>1</sup> A spirit of calmness and devotion brooded upon all of them. The dying saint seemed no longer to breathe, and every one supposed her to be dead. Once more, however, her lips moved, and breathed forth, with the energy of the spirit, the words of a pious song of praise. She died with the words of the fourth Psalm on her lips—‘I will lay me down in peace, and take my rest.’<sup>2</sup>

---

## CHAPTER XI.

THE PUBLIC LIFE AND LABOURS OF GREGORY, AS COADJUTOR  
TO HIS FATHER AT NAZIANZUM.

GREGORY had undertaken the responsibility of acting as his father's coadjutor in the episcopal duties, on condition that after his father's decease he should again be free from those duties. He was very diligent in this office, and came forward as an orator on occasions of importance and difficulty. Many of his addresses at this period are extant, and may here be noticed, in order to show the various directions in which his exertions were applied.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* viii. 22, p. 231 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. iv. 9. This was also a favourite verse of Luther's, particularly towards the close of his life. Matthesius, in his 14th *Sermon*, thus refers to it:—‘Luther wrote from Coburg to Ludwig Seuffel (an excellent and learned composer), to desire him to compose for him a good Requiem. Among other things, he tells him that he had from his youth a fondness for the concluding verses of the fourth Psalm, but that now those words became daily more dear to him, because he understood them better, and was hourly preparing for death; . . . therefore he would gladly sing and hear sung that soothing song—‘I lay me down and sleep in perfect peace’—

‘Ich lieg und schlafe ganz mit Frieden.’

One of the first public matters which the new<sup>1</sup> bishop, Gregory, transacted, was the introduction of Eulalius in the place of an expelled heretical bishop into the see of Doare, a little city in the Second Cappadocia. He made on this occasion a short but judicious oration,<sup>2</sup> in which he especially exhorts to peace and harmony the community, which had been agitated by internal commotions, and threatened with evils from without. He hopes the best from the exertions of the new bishop, whom he describes as an excellent and well-tried pastor, while he also prepares him to expect great difficulties. Encouraging are the words which he addresses to him:<sup>3</sup> ‘Approach now, thou best and most faithful of shepherds, and receive thy people with us and for us; thy people, whom the Holy Ghost giveth into thy hand, whom the holy angels here lead to thee, and who are entrusted to thee because of thy well-approved life. But if thou ascendest the episcopal chair through trials and obstacles, be not surprised thereat. *Nothing great is given to us without trial and without suffering.* For, in the nature of things, that which is low is easy, that which is high is difficult to acquire. Thou hast heard it said that ‘we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of heaven.’ And do thou also say, ‘We went through fire and water, but Thou broughtest us out and refreshedst us.’<sup>4</sup> O the wondrous mercy! ‘Weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning.’<sup>5</sup> Let the contentious imagine vain things, and open

---

<sup>1</sup> He certainly was bishop, and acted as such now, although he had never undertaken the administration of his own proper see.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xiii. pp. 253—255.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* xiii. 4, p. 254.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. lxvi. 11.

<sup>5</sup> Ps. xxx. 5.



their mouths, like dogs who bark at us without cause. We will not strive with them. But teach thou to worship God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, in three persons, of equal honour and majesty. 'Seek for them that are lost,'<sup>1</sup> strengthen the weak, preserve those who are strong. Take thy chief weapons from the armoury of the great leaders of the Church, wherewith thou mayest 'quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one,'<sup>2</sup> and present unto God 'a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation,' in Christ Jesus our Lord.'—1 Peter, ii. 9.

This appointment to the Bishopric of Doare was accompanied with some peculiar circumstances. In those unquiet times, as we have already seen from many examples, the bishops were not always chosen in the regular way. Here, also, in a Church that was disturbed within and without, from which a (probably) Arian bishop had been just ejected, Gregory, and also his father (who maintained great authority among the Cappadocian bishops), appear to have sanctioned an extraordinary mode of proceeding. For, according to all appearance, Eulalius was instituted, not only without the presence of Basil, the Metropolitan of Cappadocia, but even before he had communicated his approbation of the choice. To this refers a passage of the oration,<sup>3</sup> where Gregory says,—'I am not come hither to exhibit any disrespect towards the great shepherd who presides over that splendid city. I know his worth, I acknowledge him as my chief, I call him holy and reverend, even when I have been unfairly dealt with. Only let him love his children, and care for the whole Church. My

---

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. xxxiv. 4.    <sup>2</sup> Ephes. vi. 16.    <sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xiii. 3, p. 254.

wish was to increase the number of God's priests, not to diminish it; to extirpate heretics, not to weaken the orthodox.' Probably the Bishopric of Doare would not have been filled up by Basil with sufficient speed at a very critical point of time; and Gregory, relying upon their old friendship, thought that he would allow a (perhaps) necessary encroachment on his privilege for the good of the Church. That Eulalius was not forced upon the Church of Doare, but was wished for by the same—at least, by a great part of the community—appears plainly from the circumstances themselves, and from the oration of Gregory.

To this period probably belongs a discourse of greater length, in which he recommends *beneficence towards the poor*.<sup>1</sup> This speech is supposed by the older, as well as the later commentators upon Gregory, to have been delivered in an infirmary<sup>2</sup> of a highly beneficial character, established near Cæsarea by Basil. He could not, however, have spoken it in the extended form in which we now have it, since it resembles rather an essay, on which great pains were bestowed by Gregory, in order to animate the public mind to active benevolence, than an oration intended to be delivered *vivâ voce*.

---

<sup>1</sup> It is usually entitled *περὶ πτωχοτροφίας*, but by the Benedictine editors more correctly, *περὶ φιλοπρωχίας*. Compare the first paragraph of the discourse itself, where we read: *δέξασθε τὸν περὶ τῆς φιλοπρωχίας λόγον*. *Orat.* xiv. pp. 257—285.

<sup>2</sup> Soon after his elevation to the episcopal chair, Basil founded, in the neighbourhood of Cæsarea, a very useful institution or hospital for the sick, principally for lepers, who so often, in those parts, were forsaken by all, and doomed to the most melancholy fate. He himself took care of the sick, treated them as brothers, and, in order to convince them of the reality of that sentiment, he did not shrink from giving them the kiss of charity, notwithstanding their loathsome condition. *Gregor. Orat.* xliii. 63,

The treatise, as might be expected from its subject, is of a practical character; it contains many warm and feeling passages, but it is also here and there, unhappily, overloaded with rhetorical display, false ornament, and exaggerated figures, so that those very places where the composer thought he had succeeded best, cannot but fail of effect upon the simple, unsophisticated reader.<sup>1</sup> The best part was, that Gregory (as well as his parents, and especially his mother) always recommended love for the poor and active benevolence even more by deed and the living influence of example, than by fair words and rhetorical arguments.

Unfortunate events of a public nature also gave occasion for some remarkable orations of Gregory, which are still extant. The district of Nazianzum was about this time visited with a fearful drought, attended in its results with a destructive murrain, and concluded, as it appears, with a ruinous hail-storm. The elder Gregory, weighed down with years, and deeply afflicted by the public calamity, was not in a condition to console and strengthen his downcast children. In compliance with the general wish, therefore, his son came forward, in order to treat of this remarkable combination of mis-

---

pp. 817, 818. The institution must already have been important in its plan and design, since Gregory calls it *a new city* (καινή πόλις). It was afterwards liberally endowed by Valens, and assisted by contributions from many quarters. In honour of its founder, it retained the name of *Basilias*. A scholiast upon Gregory, of the 10th century (whose name also was Basilus), asserts that this oration was delivered by Gregory within the walls of that infirmary: τὸν προκείμενον τοῦτον περὶ φιλοπτ. λόγον ἐν τῷ πτωχείῳ ἐκπεφωνῆσθαι φασὶ, τῷ ἐν Βασιλειάδι. Nicetas also, a scholiast of the 11th century, repeats the same, though more decidedly. Compare also Gregor. Presbyter, in *Vita Gregor.*, p. 142.

<sup>1</sup> Compare, for instance, in this relation, *Orat.* xiv. 16, p. 268.

fortunes in a religious light, as divine visitations.<sup>1</sup> Gregory begins this characteristic<sup>2</sup> oration with the inquiry, 'Whence, then, come these inflictions, these occasions of distress? and what is the cause of them? Is it a disorderly and irregular movement of the universe, a progress without a guide, a blind, unreasoning impulse, as if there were no one who presides over the whole, and chance (like an automaton) brought it all to pass, as the *foolish wise ones* suppose, and those who are themselves impelled, without thought or reflection, by a gloomy and disordered mind? Or, as the universe was originally formed, blended together, and compacted by reason and order, as its movements are well regulated in a manner known only to the impelling Mind, even so is the universe altered and otherwise ordered, under the guidance and control of a superintending Providence?' The orator of course declares himself in favour of the latter view, while he firmly maintains the fact of the ever-active influence and guidance of the divine love and wisdom in all the concerns and relations of the universe.

Gregory sees in every misfortune an immediate appointment of God, and it is his main object to bring the mind of his hearers to look upon this as a means of edification and sanctification, and to think little of transient earthly evil, when set against the eternal blessings, which even thereby are brought the nearer, and made the surer to them. He represents the calamities which hang over men as certainly, in part, a *punishment*, but also, and most especially, a *proof of*

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xvi. pp. 299—315. Εἰς τὸν πατέρα σωπῶντα διὰ τὴν πληγὴν τῆς χαλάζης.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xvi. 5, p. 302.



*God's love*, and for the *improvement* of sinners, who are thereby called to repentance and conversion. How elevating, in this view, is his confession of unworthiness, and his prayer for mercy!<sup>1</sup> 'O Lord, we have sinned, we have been ungodly, and have dealt unrighteously in all thy commandments.'<sup>2</sup> We have behaved ourselves unworthily of our calling, and of the gospel of Christ, unworthily of his holy passion, and of the humiliation to which he submitted for our sakes. We have been a reproach to thy dear Son. We have fallen away from Thee, *Priests and people* alike. 'We have all gone aside from the right way; we have altogether become abominable; there is none that doeth good; no, not one.'<sup>3</sup> We have cut ourselves off from thy loving mercy; we have excluded ourselves from the tender pity of our God, through the greatness of our sins and the baseness of our councils. Thou art kind, but we have done wickedly. Thou art long suffering, but we are worthy of stripes. We acknowledge thy goodness towards us, even when we are foolish and ungrateful. We have only been too little scourged for the greatness of our sins.' And again:<sup>4</sup> 'Assuredly it were better if we required no such purgation, and had not, but now, undergone this cleansing process; it were better if our original dignity had been continued to us, for the recovery of which we labour by means of our earthly course of training; and if we had not forfeited the tree of life through the bitter pleasures of sin. But it is also better that sinners should thus be brought to turn back to the right path, than that the fallen should not be chastised, and thereby

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xvi. 12, p. 308.

<sup>2</sup> *Baruch*, ii. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Ps.* xiv. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Orat.* xvi. 15, p. 310.

disciplined and trained for better things. For ‘whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth,’ and such punishment is a proof of fatherly regard. *The soul which is not admonished and corrected is also not healed of its sin.*<sup>1</sup> *To be chastened, therefore, is not sad; but not to be made wise by chastisement, that is indeed the saddest of all.*’

At another time, a still greater evil seems to have threatened the inhabitants of Nazianzum. They had drawn upon themselves (from what cause we know not) the violent displeasure of the imperial lieutenant, or military commander of the province. The citizens were greatly alarmed, and betook themselves to their spiritual ruler for counsel. He delivered an oration, for the purpose of calming the minds of both parties, of strengthening his frightened congregation, and of appeasing the irritated imperial officer.<sup>2</sup> The fearless honesty and dignity with which Gregory, in his character of bishop, addresses the great man of the world, is a remarkable feature of this discourse. Amongst other things, he thus addresses the authorities who were present (probably with a military escort) in the church: ‘But will ye receive my frankness of speech? The law of Christ, indeed, subjects you to my spiritual power—to my judgment-seat. For we also exercise authority; nay, I

---

<sup>1</sup> *Ψυχὴ πᾶσα ἀνουθέτητος, ἀθεράπευτος*,—or, as a wise poet of antiquity expresses it, *ὁ μὴ δαρὲς ἀνθρώπος οὐ παιδεύεται*. Gregory (in his *Orat.* xvi. 7, p. 304) remarks, how salutary the chastenings of the present life (which are at the same time means of improvement) must be, in comparison with future punishments: ‘too great forbearance towards us in the present life would only hand us over to future judgment; and thus it is better to be corrected, and thereby purified now, than to be consigned to those torments, where it is no more the time for purification, but only for punishment.’

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xvii. pp. 317—326.

will go farther,—we have a higher and fuller authority.<sup>1</sup> Or shall the spirit yield to the flesh, the heavenly to the earthly? Thou, therefore, I am sure, wilt also take my freedom in good part, because thou art a holy sheep of my holy flock, a follower of the great Shepherd, because thou hast been led by the holy spirit into the right way, and hast been enlightened, even as we are, by the light of the holy and blessed Trinity. With Christ as thy helper thou governest, with Christ thou dischargest the duties of thy office; from Him thou receivedst *thy sword*, not for *actual use*, but *only in terrorem*.<sup>2</sup> O, then, keep it as a pure offering, dedicated to Him who gave it to thee! Thou art an image of God, but thou rulest also over those who bear impressed upon them God's image. Respect, then, this relationship; reverence the great Original in that image; take part with God, not with the prince of this world; with the merciful ruler, not with the cruel tyrant. Imitate God's love for man, for *to do good is the highest exercise of all that is divine in man*. Thou canst now without labour attain to the divine;<sup>3</sup> neglect not this apt occasion of god-like action.'

---

<sup>1</sup> The unprejudiced reader will hardly see in this, expressions of *hierarchical pride*; since Gregory is speaking, not of *external* power and authority, but of the higher *spiritual* dignity, the result of a higher commission. It is in the same sense that Erasmus, in a beautiful parallel, compares the clerical with the royal character, and gives precedence to the former. His assertion is: Cæterum si res ipsas justa pensemus trutina, nullus est rex tam magnificus, quatenus *rex* est, quin sit infra dignitatem, non dicam episcopi, sed *vicani pastoris*, quatenus *pastor* est.—*Ecclesiast. sive de Ratione concionandi*, lib. i. p. 67 et seq. Edit. Basil.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory therefore appears to have *denied the power of inflicting capital punishment*.

<sup>3</sup> Literally, 'become a God': — ἐξεστί σοι θεὸν γενέσθαι μηδὲν πονήσαντι.

The address of Gregory appears not to have failed of its object.<sup>1</sup>

---

## CHAPTER XII.

THE DEATH OF THE ELDER GREGORY AND HIS WIFE, NONNA :  
THE YOUNGER GREGORY RETIRES TO SELEUCIA.

THE instances above given show that Gregory was no unworthy or inefficient coadjutor to his father. Now, however, the time was come that the aged bishop (who was very nigh his hundredth year, who had been forty-five years in the priesthood, had discharged the duties of his office faithfully, and had maintained many struggles, especially under the government of Julian and of Valens)<sup>2</sup> should go to his rest. His labours ended in a painful and tedious sickness, during which, religion and its means<sup>3</sup> of grace formed his sole support. He died praying.<sup>4</sup> He left to his son the best inheritance, a lengthened series of good deeds, and the unbounded love and esteem of his congregation. The most enduring

---

<sup>1</sup> About this time also (or somewhat later) occur those transactions which Gregory had (with beneficial results to his Church and clergy) with Julian, the Imperial commissioner of taxes ; and of which we shall subsequently have a fitter occasion to speak more particularly.

<sup>2</sup> *Greg. Orat.* xviii. 37, p. 358.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 38, p. 358 : *πολλάκις τῆς ἡμέρας, ἔστι δὲ ὅτε καὶ ὥρας ὑπὸ μόνῃς ἐρρῶννυτο τῆς λειτουργίας*. This expression refers, doubtless, to the frequent celebration of the holy communion ; since it does not seem sufficient to understand literally the mere term, ‘Liturgy.’

<sup>4</sup> *Ἐν τοῖς τῆς εὐχῆς ῥήμασί καὶ σχήμασι.* *Orat.* xviii. 38, p. 359. To die *praying* was, at that time (and with justice), looked upon as a proof of genuine piety. Subsequently, greater importance was attached to dying in the *confession of the faith* which had been professed during life.



and noblest monument which his son could devote to his memory was the funeral oration<sup>1</sup> in which he commemorated his virtues. Stone and brass would by this time have broken in pieces and crumbled away, or have been trampled under foot without respect by the barbarians of those parts; but this oration will be read and admired as long as Greek literature remains.

It is certainly one of the best of the remaining orations of Gregory, full of child-like love for both his parents, full of friendship for Basil, who had come to Nazianzum for the purpose of consoling his friend, and was present at the delivery of the oration. The aged Gregory died, probably, in the spring of 374, and the oration was spoken several months afterwards. The mother, Nonna, was then still living, since she is addressed by her son in a very consolatory and elevating manner:<sup>2</sup> ‘Life and death, my mother (as man calls them), though they seem to be widely different, yet pass the one into the other, and take each the place of the other. For life begins from corruption, our common mother; it passes on through a process of corruption, since the present is ever being torn away from us; and it also ends with corruption,—that is, with the dissolution of this present life. But as to death, which gives a release from present evils, and conducts to a higher state of existence,—I know not whether we should properly call it *death*, since it is more formidable

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xviii. p. 330—362: Ἐπιτάφιος εἰς τὸν πατέρα παρόντος Βασιλείου. We have already given from this address several particulars characteristic of the elder Gregory and his wife Nonna (for she also is celebrated in the oration); several poems, addressed by Gregory to his father, are also to be found in Muratori's *Anecd. Græc.*, pp. 67—77; *Carm.* 71—81.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xviii. 42, p. 361.

in name than in reality. Indeed, we seem to think and to feel quite unreasonably, when we fear that which is not to be dreaded, but strive (as for a more desirable object) after that which deserves rather to be feared. *There is only one life, and that is, to live with a constant view to the divine life. There is only one death, and that is sin. For sin is the destruction of the soul.* But everything else, on account of which so many pride themselves, is but a dreamy vision; it cheats us out of the truth, like a seductive phantom of the soul. When we have learnt to think thus, O my mother, then shall we not feel elated on account of life, nor alarm ourselves on account of death. For what that is really bad can we be said to suffer, if we can but force our way from hence to the true life; if at length, being set free from this world's vicissitudes, from all its worry and weariness, from all attachment and subjection to wickedness and meanness, we shall there be admitted to things eternal and unchangeable, revolving like lesser lights round the great source of light!

These words of the son, addressed to his mother, whose whole life had already been a preparation for death, look like a special memento of her own approaching end. According to all probability, the aged Nonna did not long survive her husband.<sup>1</sup> Her death was, in its attendant circumstances, worthy of her life.<sup>2</sup> Without

---

<sup>1</sup> Certainly the words *καὶ μετὰ δηρὸν μητρῷ*, in the short poem given by Muratori (p. 114, *Carm.* 120), seem to point to a longer interval between the death of the elder Gregory and that of Nonna; but in the *Carmen de Vit. sua* (line 526, p. 9), Gregory speaks of the death of his parents, as if they had both died about the same time. Other circumstances also, and especially Gregory's departure from Nazianzum (which was not long after his father's death), make this probable.

<sup>2</sup> Numerous accounts of her death are to be found in the short

being bowed down by sickness or age, she went one day to pray in the church; here, in the edifice which her husband had, in great measure, built, and before the altar at which he, as a faithful pastor, had so long served, her end surprised her.<sup>1</sup> She had just taken firm hold of the altar\* with one hand, and suppliantly raised the other towards heaven, with the words, ‘Be merciful unto me, O Christ, my King!’ when her vital power failed, and her body sank down lifeless before the altar.<sup>2</sup> She also was generally mourned for, especially by the widows, orphans, and the poor, whose comfort and support she had so long been. Her body was buried near the tombs of the martyrs, by the side of her husband.<sup>3</sup> Gregory, who had loved his mother with singular affection, and never forgot how much he owed to her domestic, and especially her spiritual care,<sup>4</sup>

elegiac poems of Gregory, first published by Muratori in his *Anecd. Græcis*, pp. 77—110; *Carm.* 81—117. Compare particularly, *Carm.* 85, p. 83; 89, p. 89; 91, p. 91; 94, p. 93; 95, p. 94; 108, p. 101; 115, p. 106.

<sup>1</sup> *Carm.* 100, p. 96, in Muratori. In proof that she died in full consciousness, and without sickness, see *Carm.* 109, 102.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm.* 104, 105, pp. 98, 99, in Muratori. At the end of this poem we read:

Χειρῶν ἀμφοτέρων τῇ μὲν κατέχουσα τράπεζαν,\*  
τῇ δ’ ἐπιλίσσομένη· Ἰλαθι Χριστὲ ἄναξ.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm.* 92, p. 91, in Muratori.

<sup>4</sup> Gregory describes himself, in one of these poems, as being also especially beloved by his mother, and as being particularly like her. He lays great stress, in this relation, on the fact of her having *suckled him herself*. *Carm.* 87, p. 82:

————— τὸ δ’ ἔρρεεν αἷμα τεκούσης  
Ἀμφοτέροις ἐπὶ παισὶ, μάλιστα δὲ θρέμματι θηλῆς·  
Τούνεκα καὶ σε τόσοις ἐπιγράμμασι, μῆτερ, ἔτισα.

In *Carm.* 88, p. 89, also, Nonna is made to address Gregory as

\* Observe, τράπεζαν, the table; not βωμὸς nor θυσιαστήριον, an altar.—Translator.

honoured his deceased parent by a series of little poems, wherein he extolled her piety and her beautiful end. In one of these he says: 'Weep, mortals, for the race of mortals; but when any one dies like Nonna, *in the act of prayer*, then I weep not.'—(*Carm.* 116, p. 107.)

By his father's death, Gregory was released from the obligation of administering the episcopal duties of Nazianzum. He urged the bishops of the province to fill up the appointment; he called their attention to the fact, that he had never been instituted by regular election as Bishop of Nazianzum; that it had much rather been his object to exonerate himself from all such responsibilities and public engagements, and to withdraw again into a life of solitude.<sup>1</sup> Nevertheless, the memory of his father, and affection for a Church deprived of so excellent a bishop, called upon him not to leave the same all at once in this bereaved state. Gregory, therefore, still retained for a time the supervision of the Nazianzen Church, without making himself liable to the formal acceptance of the bishopric. This superintendence, however, must have been the more oppressive to Gregory, since about this time his already shattered health was tried by an illness of a particularly dangerous character. He seems to have

---

τέκνον ἐμῆς Θηλῆς—son of my breast. Still weightier was what Nonna had done for her son in spiritual matters, in order to dedicate him to God, with a view to a higher state of existence.

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 526—550, p. 9.

Τοῦτ' αὐτὸ φάσκων τοῖς ἐπισκόποις ἀεὶ,  
 'Αιτῶν τε δῶρον ἐκ βάθους τῆς καρδίας,  
 Στῆσαι τιν' ἄνδρα τῷ πολίσματι σκοπόν·  
 Λέγων ἀληθῶς ἐν μὲν, ὥς οὐπω τινὰ  
 Εἰληφώς εἶην γνωρίμῳ κηρύγματι·  
 Τὸ δεύτερον δ' αὖ, ὥς πάλαι δεδογμένον  
 Εἰή φυγεῖν με καὶ φίλους καὶ πράγματα.



been laid, as it were, upon his death-bed; for he was so weak, that he was not even allowed to see by his bedside a man who was particularly respected by him—Eusebius, Bishop of Samosata, who at that time was obliged, as a zealous defender of the Nicene Creed, to wander in banishment to Thrace.<sup>1</sup> On his recovery, Gregory determined positively to leave Nazianzum; and in order that he might not be hindered in his purpose by urgent entreaties, he withdrew himself from his native city without communicating anything on the subject even to his friends. He betook himself (A.D. 375) to Seleucia, in Isauria, a town of which he particularly celebrates, as a remarkable feature, a famous church, dedicated to St. Theckla.<sup>2</sup> He probably sojourned in the precincts of this *Parthenon*, as he calls the church.

In this step of Gregory's, his dislike of the prevailing disputes in the Church, his disinclination to public employment, his love for contemplative solitude, combined with the then increasing sickliness of his body, contributed to produce a determination which cannot, indeed, be quite approved, though it may be excused;<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Epist.* 28-29, p. 792.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit.* s., line 547, p. 9:

Πρῶτον μὲν ἦλθον εἰς Σελεύκειαν φυγὰς,  
Τὸν παρθενῶνα τῆς αἰοιδίου κόρης  
Θέκλας . . . . .

<sup>3</sup> Schröekh (*K. Gesch.*, th. xiii. pp. 335—337) adduces, in connexion with this incident, several of Gregory's epistles, in which he exculpates himself on account of his departure from Nazianzum—namely, *Epist.* 42, p. 803, to Gregory of Nyssa; 65, p. 823, to Philagrius; 222, p. 909, and *Epist.* 225, p. 911, to Theodore, bishop of Tyana. He seems, however, here, not to have exercised due attention, else it could not have escaped him (Schröekh), that the two first epistles are characterized by their contents as belonging to a later date (subsequent to Gregory's residence at Constantinople); but the two last are addressed to Theodore as *Bishop of Tyana*, which he did not become till A.D. 381. The

least of all is it to be deduced from an arrogant undervaluing of the humble see of Nazianzum.

For the purpose of enjoying contemplative repose and refreshment, Gregory had withdrawn to Seleucia. But ecclesiastical concerns followed him even thither,<sup>1</sup> since he was obliged to give counsel, consolation, and support to many places, during the disputes and oppressions that took place under Valens. His residence in Seleucia continued probably till the year 379; and it is to be supposed that he there received the painful intelligence of the death of his fondly-beloved Basil, who, amidst the not-to-be-restrained crowding of the people of Cæsarea, had departed with the words of our Lord,—‘Into thy hands I commend my spirit.’ The friendship between him and Gregory had certainly been disturbed by the circumstances of life; they had at one time mistaken and misunderstood each other, and their displeasure was the more bitter, because they loved so truly in the bottom of their hearts. They soon, however, came to themselves, and friend again acknowledged in his friend the better and genuine part of his character. What affectionate sentiments Gregory cherished towards his beloved Basil, even after his death, is shown not only by several epistles, but most particularly by an oration delivered at the tomb of Basil, two years afterwards, at Cæsarea, in which the most devoted fidelity and veneration for his departed friend are eloquently expressed.<sup>2</sup> Gregory also expresses his grief very

---

*Epistles* all fall into a later period of Gregory’s life, when he once more left the church of Nazianzum; they will be duly noticed in their proper place.

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, line 555, p. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliii. pp. 770—833. One of the most remarkable of Gregory’s *Orations*; from which much has already been given.

strongly in an epistle to Gregory of Nyssa,<sup>1</sup> the brother of the deceased: 'This trial also was reserved for me, in this unhappy life, to hear of the death of Basil and the departure of that blessed spirit, which has only gone *from* us in order to go *to* the Lord, after a whole life spent in preparation for that event. And now, in addition to other sorrows, a severe and dangerous illness, from which I am at this time suffering, has still denied me the gratification of kissing his holy ashes, of staying with you, his counterpart, and of consoling our common friends.'

Gregory, who had been a sufferer in mind and body, appears especially at this time to have been often in a very melancholy mood. A short epistle to his friend Eudoxius,<sup>2</sup> the rhetorician (which, without a doubt, belongs to this period), gives us a complete insight into his dejected state of mind. 'You inquire how I am; I answer, Very ill. I no longer have Basil, no longer Cæsarius—the one my spiritual, the other my natural brother. I may say, too, with David, 'My father and my mother have forsaken me.' My body is sickly; age shows itself on my head; my cares grow more complicated; business accumulates upon me; friends prove untrue; the Church is without shepherds; good is disappearing; evil presents itself barefaced. We are journeying in the night; there is nowhere a torch to give us light; Christ sleepeth. What, then, is to be done? Alas! there is only one escape for me from these evils, and that is death! But that *which lies beyond* would also affrighten me, were I obliged to judge of it from my feelings *on this side* the grave.'

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 37, al. 35, p. 799.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 39, al. 29, p. 802.

## SECTION THE THIRD.

GREGORY'S PUBLIC LABOURS AT CONSTANTINOPLE, TILL HIS RETURN TO HIS NATIVE COUNTRY—FROM A.D. 379 TO 381; THEREFORE, FROM ABOUT HIS FORTY-NINTH TO HIS FIFTY-FIRST YEAR.

**C**HRONOLOGICAL REVIEW :—The date at which Gregory went to Constantinople cannot be quite exactly determined. It was, at all events, in the year 379, when the Arian party was still dominant there. He himself informs us that his residence in Constantinople was extended to the third year; and as he left that city in the summer of 381, he must have gone thither in 379. At the commencement of this year (Jan. 19, A.D. 379), Theodosius, then thirty-three years of age, and devoted to the Nicene confession of faith, was raised to the Imperial throne. The prospects, therefore, of the adherents of that creed in the East were become favourable. Their hopes already reached their fulfilment, when (on February 28, 380) Theodosius published the celebrated edict in favour of the Nicene rule of faith, and against all the anti-Nicene parties; probably the same day on which he was baptized at Thessalonica by the orthodox bishop, Acholius. On the 24th of November, Theodosius came to Constantinople. On the 26th, he ejected the Arians from all the churches of the capital, and gave them to the orthodox Catholics. On the 10th of January, 381, there followed a new edict against Arians, Eunomians, and Photianists.



Finally, to complete his regulations, Theodosius called together a general assembly of the Church at Constantinople, which commenced its sittings in May, 381. Not long after this commencement, Gregory resigned the bishopric of the capital, which he had just formally received. He appears to have been still at Constantinople on the 31st of May, but he may have left it soon after. The synod ended on the 9th of July, 381; and now, on the 19th, on the 30th of July (and on subsequent days), the emperor published a series of laws against those whom that meeting had condemned as heretics.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### THE STATE OF RELIGION AND OF THE CHURCH AT CONSTANTINOPLE.

JUST as Gregory had now withdrawn himself, as he thought, into calm retirement, the call of Providence conducted him to an ampler stage of action than any he had as yet entered upon. He was neither allowed to give himself to the enjoyment of solitary contemplation, nor to grieve for the dear ones he had lost, nor to longings after death, but was now, for the first time, to be drawn out into active life, and exert himself actively and influentially therein. The wish of a not very numerous christian community, which, amidst all the previous acts of oppression, had remained firmly attached to the Nicene confession of faith, called our Gregory from his retirement at Seleucia to Constantinople, the then capital of the Roman empire. He complied with that call, although (as a glance at the then state of that

city, especially in a religious point of view, may easily prove) the prospect was by no means inviting.

The splendid city, ‘around which’ (as Gregory says) ‘sea and land emulously contend, in order to load it with all their best gifts, and to crown her as the queen of cities,’<sup>1</sup> had been already, during the governments of several emperors, the storehouse of all the riches and all the magnificence of life from the three known quarters of the world. This new Rome strove to raise itself in external splendour above the old city, and already almost surpassed it in the love of pleasure, which had been fostered by a corrupt court; for Julian had in vain sought to bring back the simple habits of ancient Rome. To the inhabitants of Constantinople, as well as to the Romans of later days, the first want was, ‘Bread and public amusements’ (*panis et Circenses*). Races, the theatre, the chase, contests with wild beasts, public processions, exhibitions of oratory, had, in their turn, become a sort of necessities of life for persons of all conditions; so that Gregory might well say there was much reason to fear that the first of cities would become a city of mere triflers.<sup>2</sup>

Even religious matters, like everything else, had become, to this idle, hollow state of mind, objects of jesting and amusement. That which belonged to the theatre was introduced into the church, and things that belonged to the church were, in return, adapted to the theatre. The best feelings of Christianity were not unfrequently submitted in comedies to the scornful laugh of the multitude. ‘We are become (says Gregory<sup>3</sup>) a

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxiii. 7, p. 608.

<sup>2</sup> *Or.* xxxvi. 12, p. 643 . . . . καὶ πόλιν εἶναι παιζόντων τὴν πρῶτην ἐν πόλεσιν.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* ii. 84, p. 52.

*new spectacle*, not to men and angels (like St. Paul, the noblest of all combatants, while he wrestled with the powerful and the mighty), but to well-nigh all the ungodly—and this in the market-places, at drinking-parties, in scenes of enjoyment, and even of mourning. We are already brought upon the stage, and (I must say it, though almost with tears) are made subjects for vulgar laughter in company with the most profligate of men.' *Nay, there is hardly any gratification for the eye and ear so popular as a Christian exposed to mockery and insult in a comedy!*' And in another passage:<sup>1</sup> '*My tragedy has become a comedy to the enemy; for they have taken not a little from our churches, in order to transfer it to the theatre; especially in the city, which is quite as ready to jest at divine things as anything else, and had rather laugh at that which is to be revered, than leave unlaughed-at anything really ridiculous; so that I should wonder if they do not make me also a subject of laughter while I am thus addressing you this day.*' The Constantinopolitans so completely turned everything into a subject of light jesting, that earnest Truth was stripped of its value by its rival, Wit, and that which was holy became, in the refined conversation of men of the world, a subject for raillery and jesting.

But, what was still worse, the unbridled fondness of these people for dissipated enjoyment threatened to turn the church into a theatre, and the preacher into an

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 8, p. 419. Compare *Orat.* xxi. 5, p. 388, where Gregory laments, that in Constantinople even the most honoured patterns of a christian life produced little fruit, because men were accustomed to jest quite as much about holy things as about horse-racing and theatrical exhibitions.

actor. If he wished to please the many, he was obliged to accommodate himself to their taste, and to entertain and amuse them in the church. They required, also, in the sermon, something to gratify the ear, glittering declamation, with a theatrical delivery; and they then applauded with the same sort of pleasure *the actor* (*den Komödianten*) in the holy place, and the histrionic performer on the stage. And alas! there were found, at that time also, too many who sought rather the approbation of men than the good of their souls.<sup>1</sup> ‘How many do I find this day (says Gregory<sup>2</sup>) who have undertaken the priestly office, but have artificially adorned *the simple, artless piety of our religion*, and introduced a new sort of secular oratory into the sanctuary and its holy ministrations, borrowed from the forum<sup>3</sup> and the theatre! So that *we have now*, if I may so express myself, *two stages*, differing from each other only in this, that the one stands open to all, the other only to a few; the one is laughed at, the other is respected; the one is theatrical, the other clerical.’

The opposite views of the faith excited at that period, especially in Constantinople, a very general and lively interest, which was supported, and even directed by the court, though not always in the most commendable manner. It was, for the most part, not the interest of the heart, but of a sophistical and disputatious understanding, (if not something far meaner,) to which the

---

<sup>1</sup> They were such as are pointed to by Gregory in his *Carmen. adv. Episc.*, line 342:

Τὸ πρὸς χάριν τιμῶντες, οὐ τὸ συμφέρον.

*Orat.* xxxvi. 2, p. 635.

‘. . . ἀπὸ τῶν θεάτρων ἐπὶ τὴν τοῖς πολλοῖς ἀθεατοὺς  
μυσταγωγίαν.



controversy about points of faith served only for a pretext,<sup>1</sup> in order to succeed in the outward views of avarice and ambition. Whilst the sanctifying and beatifying doctrines of the Gospel, which point to the conversion of the inner man, were suffered to lie inactive, every one, from the emperor to the beggar, occupied himself, with incredible earnestness, in the discussion of some few theoretical propositions, concerning which the Gospel communicates just so much as is beneficial to men's minds, and necessary for salvation, and whose farther development, at all events, belongs rather to the schools than to every-day life. But the more violently these disputations were kindled, disturbing and dividing states, cities, and families, so much the more were the practical essentials of Christianity lost sight of. It seemed more important to maintain the doctrine of the Trinity than to love God with all the soul; to acknowledge the equality of the Son's nature, than to follow after Him in humility and self-denial; to defend the personality of the Holy Ghost, than to bring forth the fruits of the Spirit—love, peace, righteousness. The party of the *Eunomians*, who had gained from their founder a remarkable skill in logic, certainly nourished the taste for religious controversy very particularly. But the evil was by no means confined to them; under the appearance of an interest in religion, an impatient, disputatious garrulity about points of faith, a passion for disputing and displaying wit, at the most ill-suited time and most improper place, had taken possession of most persons of all parties—a state of

---

*Carm.* xi. line 162, p. 84. Gregory says: *καὶ πρόφασις τριᾶς ἐστὶ.*

things which had its comic,<sup>1</sup> and also its sad and serious side. In this latter relation it especially affected Gregory, who must have suffered much in consequence. He says: 'It is come to such a pitch, that the entire market-place resounds with the speeches of heretics; every meal is spoilt by this chattering, *ad nauseam*; every festivity is turned thereby into mourning: while every mournful solemnity is almost robbed of its painful character by a still greater evil—this fierce altercation; so that even the women's apartments, and the nurseries of simple childhood, are disturbed thereby, and the fair blossoms of modesty are nipped and spoilt by this premature training for disputation.'<sup>2</sup> This is a sketch of the *disturbing* influence of this contentious spirit; it had, however, besides that, a fearfully *destructive* influence on all domestic and political relations. This bad effect is pointed out by Gregory in most lively colours in another passage—'It is this,' he says,<sup>3</sup> 'which has torn asunder the members of that one body—the Church; has set brothers at enmity; thrown cities into commotion; enraged citizens against each other; driven

---

<sup>1</sup> The comic side is especially exhibited by Gregory of Nyssa, in a passage already much quoted: *Orat. de Deitat. Filii et Spir. Sanct.*, *Opp.* t. iii. p. 466, ed. Paris; where he describes how at that time labouring-men, traders, old-clothesmen, and runaway slaves, set themselves up as teachers of dogmatic religion; and how it was hardly possible to transact money-matters, to purchase bread, to bespeak a bath, without being involved in a philosophical discussion whether the Son was begotten or not begotten, his subordination to the Father, and the like! Compare Neander's account of this rage for dogmatic disputation among the people of Constantinople, against which the practical piety of Chrysostom had to contend. Neander's *Chrysost.*, 2nd Th. pp. 18, 118.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxvii. 2, p. 488. Compare *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1210, p. 19.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xxxii. 4, p. 581.

the people to take up arms; stirred up princes; separated priests from their people, and from each other; the people from their priests, and from one another; parents from their children, children from their parents; husbands from their wives, wives from their husbands. Everything which bears a holy name has been profaned; slaves and masters, pupils and teachers, old and young, have brought dishonour upon themselves and all the laws of veneration (that peculiar safeguard of virtue!) In lieu thereof, an insolent presumption is introduced as the highest law; and we are divided, not merely tribe against tribe, (as Israel of old,) but houses and families against each other; *nay, almost every one is distracted within himself*. And this is true of the whole world, the whole human race, as far as the heavenly doctrines of the Gospel have penetrated.'

In addition to these religious disputes there arose also political struggles, in the form of the serious wars maintained by the Roman empire against the Goths, so that this empire, in a very great degree, presented the appearance of a sea agitated by violent storms.<sup>1</sup>

But the unhappy divisions by which, at that time, the Christians in general were distracted, showed themselves under a form peculiarly alarming in the very capital of the empire. Under the late governments different parties had, by turns, been patronized, but subsequently those in particular who, though entertaining different views from each other, yet agreed in this,

---

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Orat.* xxii. 2, p. 415, where, among other things, he says: 'It is dreadful to think of what we now see and hear: whole provinces laid waste—myriads of people slain—the ground covered with blood and dead bodies—a people of strange language (*i.e.* the Goths, see *Orat.* xxxiii. 2, p. 604) are stalking over a land that is not theirs, as if it were their own home.' . . . .

that they impugned the Nicene rule of faith. Constantius had protected the Arian party; Julian, during his short government, all parties alike, (at least in appearance,) but only to oppress all. After Jovian's early death, Valens succeeded to the supreme power in the eastern portion of the empire; and, with him, Arianism had even more favour than it had had with Constantius; for he did not merely protect it, but also sought, by revolting cruelties inflicted upon the friends of the Nicene decrees, to make it predominant. The orthodox Christians were now excluded from all churches and ecclesiastical property, and the Arians took possession of the same. Constantinople, however, still continued the arena of ecclesiastical contention and religious partizanship. In that great city, to which, together with some isolated good things, so much that was bad flowed in from all parts of the world, almost all parties had their adherents; but the following were the most remarkable. The *Eunomians*, professing an intellectual theology (which pretended to have completely explored the being of God by means of logical definitions), and after a strictly Arian fashion asserting the inequality of the Son to the Father, were very numerous in Constantinople,<sup>1</sup> and injured the earnest, practical sense of religion chiefly by this, that they made use of the doctrines of Christianity exclusively as subjects for a disputatious

---

<sup>1</sup> This is abundantly proved by the fact, that Gregory directed his polemical efforts principally against this party. Even in the more intimate society of the Emperor Theodosius, there were still, at first, some followers of Eunomius, but they were soon got rid of.—Philostorg. *Hist. Eccl.*, x. 6. Compare also, Sozomen. *Hist. Eccl.*, vi. 27, upon the wide spread of this party.



logic. The *Macedonians*,<sup>1</sup> who were attached to a semi-Arian notion of the equality of the natures in the Father and the Son, and, so far, approached nearer to the orthodox, were, at the same time, distinguished by a dignified earnestness of behaviour, and a monastic strictness of manner. They were themselves excluded from the possession of church property by the pure Arians, but still they spread widely, partly in Constantinople itself, partly in the neighbouring districts of the Hellespont, Thrace, Bithynia, and Phrygia. The *Novatians*, outstepping the Macedonians in the strictness of their practical principles, had, at a former time, been on the point of uniting with the orthodox party, (from whom they did not differ on the main dogma in dispute, and with whom they experienced like oppression from the Arians,) had not the malevolent disposition of some party-leaders interposed as an obstacle. Thus they still remained separate, and therefore also increased the number of the opponents of orthodoxy.<sup>2</sup> Lastly, the *Apollinarians* had also begun to establish themselves there in numbers. Their doctrine contradicted the confession of Christ's true and perfect human nature, for that nature consists particularly of the faculty of reason (which they denied to Christ\*). There was also a report at that time, as Gregory informs us, that an assembly of Apollinarian bishops would be held at Con-

---

<sup>1</sup> We see the proof of their numbers in the polemical orations of Gregory delivered in Constantinople. We shall have occasion, in the dogmatic portion of this work, to speak more at length concerning these parties.

<sup>2</sup> Sozomen. *Hist. Eccles.*, iv. 20.

\* This parenthesis is interpolated by me, to make the sentence intelligible.—*Translator*.

stantinople, with the view of elevating their doctrine of Christ's nature into general notice, and even of forcing it upon the Churches.<sup>1</sup>

Through these different and daily increasing forms of opposition, the orthodox Church had come into a lamentable condition; and we cannot but wonder that the small band of her faithful members had not already melted away altogether, under the furious persecutions of their opponents, particularly of the pure Arians. From their ecclesiastical independence, and from their corporate existence in relation to the State, they had already been virtually ejected. They were held together only by brotherly love (which, alas! was often disturbed), and a common devotion to the same confession of faith. We cannot better learn the condition of the orthodox Church community immediately before the arrival of Gregory, than from the description which he has given us;<sup>2</sup> a description which we can so much the less consider exaggerated, as it is taken from an oration which he delivered in the presence of a large portion of the inhabitants of Constantinople, and before one hundred and fifty bishops. 'This flock (he is speaking of his congregation) was once small and destitute, at least to the outward eye. Nay, it was hardly to be called a flock, but only a small trace, a remnant of a

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Carm de Vit. sua*, line 609 et seq. p. 10 :

Καὶ γάρ τις ἐθρυλλεῖτο καὶ συνήλυσίς  
Ἐπισκόπων, νείλυν αἶρεσιν λόγων  
Ἐπεισαγόντων ταῖς φίλαις ἐκκλησίαις.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 2, p. 749. Of the same purport, *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 587—591, p. 10.

Εἶχε τι μικρὸν ζωτικῆς σπέρμα πνοῆς,  
Ψυχὰς τελειὰς τῷ λόγῳ τῆς πίστεως,  
Λαὸν βραχὺν μὲν, τῷ Θεῷ δὲ πλειόνα.

flock, without order, without an overseer, without coherence. They had neither free pastures, nor any regular fold, but they wandered about upon the hills, 'in dens and caves of the earth' (Hebrews, xi. 38), scattered here and there, torn and bruised; and if they found a bare support and scanty pasturage, they thought themselves fortunate to steal away again in safety.'

Such was the wretched, distracted state of the orthodox party at Constantinople, when Valens, the patron of Arianism, lost his life in the bloody battle against the Goths, near Adrianople, A.D. 378. Gratian, in consideration of the highly critical state of the empire, wished to share the troubles and dangers of government with an efficient colleague. For this purpose he chose *Theodosius* (at that time thirty-three years of age), who was called to the throne from his paternal estate in Spain, whither he had been banished. He entered upon the government of the East in the year 379, and from his ascending the throne commences a new and happy epoch for the hitherto oppressed orthodox party. Even in the capital of the Eastern empire (nay, there most especially), they now dared to form the best hopes; they only wanted a man who could stand with power and spirit at the head of their little band, supply them with a rallying-point, and procure them respect among the hostile parties. Could such an one be found, they dared to hope for victory; but not without a struggle, since the entire ecclesiastical power was in the hands of the Arians and the parties connected with them.

## CHAPTER II.

## GREGORY COMES TO CONSTANTINOPLE, AND COLLECTS A CONGREGATION.

IN this state of things, many members of the neglected community, and even some bishops<sup>1</sup> (probably of the neighbourhood), turned their thoughts towards *Gregory*, whose fame was already spread widely in the East, and urgently requested him to come at this decisive moment<sup>2</sup> to Constantinople. He allowed himself to be persuaded, though he assures us that he went thither sorely against his wishes; nay, he even hints that they were obliged to use force to tear him from the retirement of his then

---

<sup>1</sup> An epistle to Bosporius, of Colonia, seems to refer to this: *Epist.* xiv. al. 48, p. 777.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory says so plainly enough. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, lines 592-596, p. 10:

Τούτοις . . . .

"Ἐπεμψεν ἡμᾶς ἡ χάρις τοῦ Πνεύματος,  
Πολλῶν καλοῦντων ποιμένων καὶ θρεμμάτων.

Compare with this his *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 81, p. 12. That under the expression, 'many of the sheep,' *θρόμματα*, Gregory expressly understands members of the orthodox Church at Constantinople, is clear from a passage in the 36th *Oration*, where, among the reasons why his congregation was so attached to him, he assigns this also, 'because they looked upon him as their own work,'—that is, because they had called him thither. Many others, also, both laymen and clergy, may have encouraged Gregory to go to Constantinople. Among them, Gregory Presbyter (in his *Vita Gregorii*, p. 18) particularly mentions *Basil*, as having, shortly before his death, expressed this wish to his friend. Probably, also, *Peter*, bishop of Alexandria, was among them, who, both in his fate, as well as in his episcopal chair, was a respected successor to Athanasius. At least, he wrote to Gregory, either just before his arrival at Constantinople, or soon after, a very friendly letter, wherein he declares him to be the legitimate Bishop of Constantinople.—Gregor. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 858, p. 14.



residence.<sup>1</sup> It was subsequently a subject of especial satisfaction to him to be able to attest that he had not, in the least, troubled himself about the charge of the Bishopric of Constantinople, but that he had been called, nay, forced to go, and had only come thither from a sense of duty and the impulse of the Spirit.<sup>2</sup>

Gregory appeared unexpectedly in Constantinople, and the impression which he at first made upon the people was not favourable to him. He came to defend a faith which was still rejected with passionate earnestness by most of them. He was a pious and an eloquent man, but he had never taken any pains to make himself agreeable and commanding by attention to externals; and he had to make his public appearance before a city which did not regard even the most precious stone, if it had not been previously polished. They wanted a showy orator, full of power and grace, and there came to them instead a man already grown old,<sup>3</sup> bent with infirmity, his eye downcast, his head bald, his features full of indications of inward struggle and outward privations; clad, moreover, in miserable apparel.<sup>4</sup> This

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 607, p. 10 : Οὕτω μὲν ἦλθον οὐκ ἐκὼν, ἀλλ' ἀνδράσι κλαπεῖς βιαίτοις. The passage, however, is poetically indefinite. Chrysostom, also, was brought from Antioch to Constantinople by an artful piece of violence.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxiii. 13, p. 612.

<sup>3</sup> Gregory, nevertheless, was not so very advanced in years, being about fifty. But excessive asceticism had too early weakened his body, and made him an old man before his time. *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 110, p. 34, he says :

Τὸ χάλκεον μοι σῶμα φροντίσιν τακὲν  
Ἦδη νένευκεν . . . .

<sup>4</sup> Simeon, the paraphrast, describes Gregory's external appearance in the following terms :—Quantum autem ad corporis formam attinet, statura mediocri erat, pallidus aliquantulum, non tamen citra venustatem; depresso naso, superciliis in rectum

man, they could see plainly, came not from the polished society of a distinguished city, but from the country, and some remote corner! He looked almost like an outcast or a beggar, without goods and chattels;<sup>1</sup> and yet this man was now to commence the struggle with different parties, far superior in might and in numbers. Such an enterprise at least bespoke courage and trust in God.

On arriving at Constantinople, Gregory lodged with some relations, of whom we have no farther account. It was probably in that dwelling that the first meetings of the small body of the orthodox were held—still, however, in private, and not without danger from their persecuting opponents. The professors of the Nicene system of faith appear at first to have established here a private chapel, which by degrees was enlarged, and subsequently grew into a vast and celebrated church. It obtained the significant name of *Anastasia*, or the Church of the

---

protensis, aspectu blando et suavi, altero oculo (nempe dextro) subtristis, quem etiam cicatrix quædam contrahebat, barba non promissa, densa tamen. Qua parte calvus non erat (nam subcalvus erat) albos crines habebat, summas item barbæ partes velut fumo obsitas ostendebat. This writer, however, of the twelfth century, refers to no original source of information. Du Cange gives a portrait of Gregory from a MS. copy of his works, made in the time of Basil, the Macedonian, and now to be seen in Paris. See Du Cange's *Constantinop. Christiana*, lib. iv. cap. 6, p. 125, where, also, farther particulars are adduced respecting this Father's outward appearance. In this representation, Gregory stands perfectly upright, in sacerdotal dress, with the book of the Gospel in his left hand. He is very characteristically distinguished from his brother Cæsarius (who is standing by him in a secular dress), by shorter hair, a longer beard, and a more serious expression of countenance.

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, l. 696, p. 11 :

Ὁὐ γὰρ φορητὸν ἄνδρα τὸν πενέστατον,  
 ῥικνὸν, κάτω νέοντα, καὶ δυσείμονα,  
 Γαστροὺς χαλινοῖς δάκρυσι τετηχότα,  
 Φόβῳ τε τοῦ μέλλοντος, ὡς δ' ἄλλοις κακοῖς . . .

Resurrection, because the Nicene faith, which had lain for awhile in a death-like slumber, had here been raised up, and recovered fresh life and energy.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory's first business must have been, not so much to contend with opponents, as to unite firmly among themselves the members of his little congregation, and to lead them into the true path of the christian life. He had, perhaps, been invited principally as an advocate for the Nicene creed, and, as we shall soon see, he responded to that call with brilliant success. But it was, notwithstanding, the weightiest object with him, so to lead those who were commended to his care *into the true spirit of an active Christianity*, that their faith might be proved and recommended by their lives. For they also who had now attached themselves to Gregory, were only too much accustomed to empty talking and disputing about points of faith. He for that reason repeatedly and powerfully reminded them, that this mischievous

---

<sup>1</sup> See *Orat.* xxvi. 17, p. 484. . . . οἰκός τις ἀνέπαιυσεν ἡμᾶς εὐσεβῆς καὶ φιλόθεος συγγενῶν τὸ σῶμα, συγγενῶν τὸ πνεῦμα, πάντα φιλότιμος, παρ' οἷς καὶ ὁ λαὸς οὗτος ἐπάγη, κλέπτων ἔτι τὴν διωκομένην εὐσεβειαν, οὐκ ἀδεῶς, οὐδὲ ἀκινδύνως. *Orat.* xlii. 26, p. 766 : Χαίροις Ἀναστασία μοι τῆς εὐσεβείας ἐπώνυμε· σὺ γὰρ τὸν λόγον ἡμῶν ἐξανεστήσας ἔτι καταφρονούμενον, κ.τ.λ. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1079, p. 17 :

Ἀναστασία, ναὼν ὁ τιμιώτατος,

Ἡ πίστιν ἐξήγειρας ἐν γῇ κειμένην.

Other opinions concerning the origin of the Anastasia church and its name are to be seen in Du Cange's *Constantinop. Christian.*, lib. iv. cap. 7, p. 141 et seq. This church was always particularly dear to Gregory, and cherished in his memory. See his *Somnium de Anastasiæ Templo*, *Carm.* ix., especially verse 61, p. 79. He compares it frequently to Noah's ark, to Shilo, where the ark of the covenant found a secure resting-place, and the like. Legends also ennobled this church with accounts of miracles connected with it.—Sozom. *Hist. Eccles.*, vii. 5. It was in many respects enlarged and adorned under the subsequent emperors.

and God-forgetting talkativeness about divine things destroyed all genuine fear of God, and desecrated what was holy ; and that there was *only one way* of the truly christian life,—that of *active piety in the fulfilment of God's commandments*. And this consisted in tending upon the sick, assisting the poor, real hospitality, persevering prayer, devoted self-denial, temperance, subduing of the passions, and the like. Such a devoted, self-denying life of active charity he recommended, as the simple way of faith, to all who wished to attain to true happiness. 'If (he added) faith were only for the learned, then none amongst us would be poorer than<sup>1</sup> God.' Whenever he had opportunity, Gregory repeated the weighty truth (which, indeed, contained within it one of the fundamental thoughts of his whole theology), that the knowledge of God and of his revealed will was only attainable in proportion to the purifying of the soul from the soil of sin ; that only the pure soul was capable of holding intercourse with the Eternally-Pure ; and that it was *only through a godly life that any one could raise himself to the knowledge and contemplation of the divine nature*. The doing God's will was, with him, the necessary prelude and the only way to a true and living knowledge ; in all his dogmatic speculations, he never lost sight of that.<sup>2</sup>

Gregory expresses himself very clearly on these

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1210—1231, pp. 19, 20. The same thoughts are very strongly expressed in *Orat.* xxvii. 7, p. 492, and in several passages of this oration. Under the term, '*the learned*,' Gregory means such as not merely simply received and acted upon the truths of the faith, but were also able to dispute concerning them.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xx. 12, pp. 383—4, p. 377 ; *Orat.* xxxix. 9, p. 682 ; and in many other places.



subjects in the Introduction to his celebrated theological discourses, from whence we must extract a particularly appropriate passage :<sup>1</sup> ‘It is not every one’s business to philosophise about God,—not every one’s, I repeat; for even that which is suited to the powers of those who still crawl upon the earth, is no easy subject. I add, moreover, that it is not proper everywhere, and before everybody, and without limitation; but only at certain times, before certain persons, and according to certain rules. It is not for all, but only for those who have been proved and exercised in knowledge, and, above all, for such as have already purified their souls and bodies, or, at least, are beginning to purify them. For the impure cannot without danger presume to touch the All-pure, any more than the weak eye can support the beams of the sun. But when may we entertain the subject? Even then, when we are free from the external, ordinary bustle and turmoil of life; when the higher, nobler part of our nature (τὸ ἡγεμονικόν) is not disturbed by the impression of pitiful, distracting things. And before whom? Only before such persons as consider the subject as a solemn matter; who treat divine things not like other topics, as subjects only for

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxvii. 3, p. 489. The whole discourse is worth consulting, containing, as it does, very many practical truths. It is especially directed against the Eunomians, whom Gregory designates as χαίροντες ταῖς βεβήλοις κενοφωνίαις, καὶ ἀντιθέσει τῆς ψευδωνύμου γνίνσεως, καὶ ταῖς εἰς οὐδὲν χρήσιμον φερούσαις λογομαχίαις. He farther says of them : πρὸς ἓν τοῦτο βλέπουσι μόνον, ὅ τι δήσουσιν ἢ λύσουσι τῶν προβαλλομένων. He then sketches the pernicious and melancholy results of the divisions in the christian Church, and exhorts his hearers, if these separations into parties could not at once be got rid of, that at least they should reflect, that *holy subjects should be handled as holy*, and not be profaned by acrimonious contentions in the hearing of the heathen.—*Ibid.* 5, 6, p. 491 et seq.

idle amusement, after discussing horse-races or the theatre, after songs, and the gratification of sense and appetite; who think it wicked to practise raillery upon these sacred topics, in mere display of antithetical skill, and as an ingredient of a life of pleasure. On what, then, should we philosophise, and within what limits? On that which is within reach of the understanding, and as far as the comprehensive faculty and intellectual ability of the hearer can follow. Yet (he subsequently adds) let no one misconstrue all this which I have said, as if we should not always be thinking of God. We ought, indeed, rather to think of God than draw in our breath; nay, if it were possible, we should do nothing else.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory treats of these things still more copiously in a discourse, which he delivered probably at the commencement of his residence in Constantinople, and in which, among other things, he reminds his hearers, in a very striking manner,<sup>2</sup> that the essence of christian wisdom consists, not in a sturdy readiness for argument, and the ability to express oneself eloquently on divine things, but *in true self-knowledge and humility*; and that it is better to give way mildly and wisely, than to be arrogantly stubborn and ignorant at the same time. In the same oration, he also powerfully and beautifully argues against an eagerness in condemning others, and *declaring them to be heretics*. ‘Condemn not (he says<sup>3</sup>) thy brother, call not his timidity ungodliness, and go not thoughtlessly too far, while thou doomest, or (when thou wouldst display a mild temper) absolvest him.

<sup>1</sup> . . . . . οὐ τὸ μεμνησθαι διηνεκῶς κωλύω, τὸ θεολογεῖν δὲ. οὐδὲ τὴν θεολογίαν, ὥσπερ ἀσεβεῖς, ἀλλὰ τὴν ἀκαιρίαν· οὐδὲ τὴν διδασκαλίαν, ἀλλὰ τὴν ἀμετρίαν.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxii. 21, p. 594.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xxxii. 29, p. 599.

But on such occasions appear as the more humble; give thy brother the preference to thyself, assuredly not to thy own damage; for in such a case the act of *condemning and despising is nothing else than shutting out a brother from Christ, the sole hope of sinners*; it is to pull up with the weeds, the hidden fruit, which is possibly of more value than thou art.<sup>1</sup> But rather, raise him up, gently and lovingly, not as an antagonist, not as a physician administering medicine by force, not as one who knoweth nothing but burning and cutting. Learn rather to know thyself in the spirit of humility, and search out thy own weaknesses. Truly, it is not one and the same thing to pull up and destroy a plant or a transient flower, and *a man*. Thou art an image of God, and hast to do with an image of God; and thou, who judgest, wilt thyself be judged. Try, then, and examine thy brother as one who is to be judged by the same standard as thyself.' Gregory also particularly recommended patient mildness in judging others, inasmuch as no one has a right to require of another to be *pious exactly after the same manner as he is himself*. He urged this especially against the Eunomians, who exclusively considered the faculty of perception only (that is, the understanding, with its determinations and judgments), as the instrument through which we enter into connexion with God and a higher world. In opposition to such confined views, he makes repeated use of our Lord's expression: 'In my father's house are *many mansions*,' and concludes from them, that, as there are various mansions with God, so there must also be *different ways* (that is to say, different

---

<sup>1</sup> Matth. xiii. 29.

*modes of life*) which lead thereto. And thus, all these ways make up only one, — namely, that of virtue; though this *one* may branch off again into many.<sup>1</sup> Wherever Gregory found an earnest christian mind, and the living fruits of piety, he was willing to value them, even though there were connected with them a difference from his own dogmatic convictions. With this feeling, he expresses himself with affectionate toleration towards the Macedonians, whom (as brethren over whom he did not wish to triumph, but with whom he would gladly harmonize) he thus addresses:<sup>2</sup> ‘Such is the love I cherish for you, such the respect I feel for your becoming apparel, for your complexion, so expressive of abstemiousness, for your holy societies, for the honour paid by you to virgin purity, for your nightly psalm-singing, your love of the poor, your brotherly kindness, your hospitality, that I could even wish to be *accursed from Christ* (Rom. ix. 3), and suffer anything as condemned for you, if ye were but united with us.’

---

### CHAPTER III.

GREGORY, BEING REVEILED AND PERSECUTED BY THE OPPOSITE PARTIES, ENDURES IT WITH MILD FORBEARANCE: CONTENTION AMONGST THE ORTHODOX IN CONSTANTINOPLE.

WHILE Gregory was obliged to exert all his energies in order to collect only a small congregation, bound to-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxvii. 8, p. 493. After these observations, Gregory makes the following application to the Eunomians: *τί οὖν, ὦ βέλτιστε, ὡςπὲρ τινα πενίαν, καταγνῶντες τοῦ ἡμετέρου λόγου, πάσας τὰς ἄλλας ὁδοὺς ἀφέντες, πρὸς μίαν ταύτην φέρεσθε καὶ ὠθεῖσθε τὴν διὰ λόγου καὶ θεωρίας, ὡς αὐτοὶ οἶσθε, ὡς δὲ ἐγὼ φημι, ἀδολεσχίας καὶ τερατείας.*

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xli. 8, p. 737.



gether in truly evangelical sentiments, he had to encounter severe struggles and persecutions from without. He was, from the first, an object of hatred and of ridicule for all other parties, and men stooped to the lowest calumnies against him. They reproached him with his little congregation, his poverty, his origin from an obscure, indigent, provincial town; they called him, in disparagement, a stranger, a foreigner; they even jested upon his well-worn clothing, his rough, unpolished behaviour, and the like. He, in return, gloried, with a noble pride in those very things which were objected against him, rejoicing in his congregation, small indeed and poor, but true and faithful—not ashamed of the plain, unpolished manners of his fatherland, but simply remarking, that all men, who are truly great and noble, had in common one spiritual and heavenly country.<sup>1</sup>

Such reproachful language might well be endured; but in those times of wild excitement, the religious hatred of zealots soon proceeded to deeds. Even in the midst of his little flock the life of Gregory was not secure.<sup>2</sup> On one occasion, in the night-time, the meeting-place of the orthodox was assailed; a mob of Arians, and, in particular, women of the lowest stamp, led on by monks, armed themselves with sticks and stones, and forced an entrance into the peaceful place of holy worship. The champion of orthodoxy well nigh became a martyr to his convictions: the altar was profaned, the consecrated wine was mixed with blood, the house of prayer was made a scene of outrage and unbridled

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxiii. 1, p. 603; and also 6—10, p. 607 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, lines 665—678; *Epist.* 81, p. 839; *Orat.* xxxiii. 5, p. 607; *Orat.* xxiii. 5, p. 428; *Orat.* xxxv. 3, 4, p. 630 et seq.

licentiousness. Gregory happily escaped; but on the next morning he was summoned before the magistrates on account of this nocturnal tumult.<sup>1</sup> In the full consciousness of his innocence he defended himself so successfully, that this transaction served only to increase the triumph of his righteous cause. Most probably it was this event (though many others like it may have happened) which afterwards obtained for Gregory the honourable title of *a Confessor*.

During all these persecutions, the pattern of St. Stephen, and the many heroes of the christian faith, floated before the mind of Gregory—but especially the example of Him, who said, ‘Bless them that curse you,’ and who even prayed for his enemies while hanging on the cross. He therefore treated even his enemies with gentleness and kindness, because it was a weightier object with him to improve them, than to cause their injustice to be punished. He counted it, like the first witnesses to the Gospel, a source of joy and satisfaction to suffer for the truth’s sake; and he would certainly not have exchanged this state of suffering for a life of undisturbed, unruffled quiet. Hear how he expresses himself on the subject on writing to a friend:<sup>2</sup> ‘Although fearful, yea, exceedingly fearful things have befallen us, yet it will be better to exercise patience, and to set a pattern of patient suffering to the great body of Christians; for men in general are not so powerfully convinced by words as by deeds; and deeds under such

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 668, p. 11. Gregory Presbyter thus expresses himself thereon: συλλαβόμενοι δὲ αὐτὸν, τῷ τοῦ ὑπατικοῦ παρέστησαν βήματι, ὡς τινα παραχῶν καὶ στάσεων αἰτίον.—*Vita Gregorii*, p. 144.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 81, p. 839—841.

circumstances are a silent exhortation. It is certainly something great to see justice done upon those who have done us injustice; something great, I say, because it is also beneficial, and for the good of others. But it is far greater, and more godlike, to bear injustice with courage; for the former puts a check upon baseness, but the latter brings the wicked to a softer tone of mind; and that is surely much better and more excellent than that they should simply not be base.' After quoting from the Scriptures examples of a patient endurance of suffering, Gregory thus proceeds:—'You see, then, at once, the whole process of mild forbearance; first of all, it prescribes the course required by law; then it recommends, it promises, it threatens, it punishes, but again holds back the hand; again it threatens, if there be a necessity; it strikes a blow, but with a wish to spare, since it wishes only to prepare men for improvement. So, also, we would not strike immediately, (for that would not be prudent,) but would overcome by love. We would not cause the fig-tree to be dried up at once, which might still bear fruit.'

Unhappily Gregory had to contend, not merely against the different Arian parties, but also against dissension in his own community. The spirit of partizanship, especially in connexion with religion, had, at that time, spread itself over all nations and cities, and extended its baneful influence even to the smallest communities. Even the little band of orthodox at Constantinople, oppressed as it was on all sides, was not perfectly united together, but took part in a division which had diffused itself from Antioch over almost the whole of eastern and western Christendom. The dispute began about the election of bishops, but was originally

also connected with the great Arian commotions. At the date, however, when this question concerns us, it referred properly to the persons of the rival bishops. When Arianism was dominant in Antioch, Meletius, formerly Bishop of Sebaste, but, at that time, of Berœa, was chosen bishop by the Acacian, or Arian party, because he had completely assented to the doctrines of Acacius in the council at Seleucia. Nevertheless, they had deceived themselves in their choice of him, or he had altered his opinions. As soon as he entered upon his bishopric, he at first avoided dogmatic expositions, and preached merely moral doctrines.<sup>1</sup> Afterwards, however, he began to propound the Nicene confession of faith, and to maintain the equality of persons. This caused his banishment. Euzoius, an Arian of the old school, was his successor. The adherents, however, of Meletius separated themselves from the Arians, and formed a distinct community, yet without uniting with the old orthodox, or Nicene party; for these held back from the Meletian party, because Meletius had been made bishop by the Arians. These two parties, therefore—the old orthodox and the Meletian—although agreeing in their convictions, were yet ecclesiastically distinct. Subsequently, when, under the government of Julian, the Nicene-minded bishops, who had been banished by Constantius, returned from their exile in the Upper Thebais—viz. Eusebius, bishop of Vercellæ, and Lucifer, bishop of Calaris—the latter betook himself to Antioch, and there consecrated the presbyter, Paulinus, as their bishop, in order to give a head to the party attached to

---

<sup>1</sup> . . . . . ὁ δὲ, πρῶτον μὲν περὶ δόγματος διαλέγεσθαι ὑπερτίθετο, μόνην δὲ τὴν ἡθικὴν διδασκαλίαν τοῖς ἀκροαταῖς προσήκειν.—Socrat. ii. 44.



the banished Meletius. He was not, however, acknowledged as such by a great portion of them, and so much the less, when now Meletius himself returned to Antioch from exile. The orthodox Christians, therefore, in Antioch remained thus divided into two parties, of which that of Meletius was the more important—that of Paulinus the less numerous; and this division still continued, when the party against which they both contended (*i.e.* the Arian) had already lost much of its strength. They even extended their influence to the other orthodox Churches, since the Western and Egyptian Churches were gained over by Lucifer to the interest of Paulinus, while the Eastern Churches sided with Meletius. It even happened that, in some particular communities, men's minds were divided on this point, and a part of the members declared themselves for Paulinus, another part for Meletius. This appears certainly to have been the case in Constantinople at the very time when Gregory presided over the orthodox community there. At least, there are several passages, particularly in the 22<sup>nd</sup> *Oration*, which cannot be better explained than by referring them to this state of things. 'There is no end (says Gregory) to our combat, not only with those who differ from our opinions, and vary from us on points of faith, but also with those of like opinions, who contend against the same and for the same with us—a circumstance which is, in truth, most extraordinary, melancholy, and to be lamented.'<sup>1</sup> He then remarks, that the same teachers are to-day extolled to the sky, and to-morrow doomed to hell; to-day they are ranked with Elias and John, to-morrow, with Judas and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 4, p. 416.

Caiaphas; while their discreet and abstemious bearing, their dignity, blended with affability, are to-day interpreted as genuine piety, to-morrow as hypocritical vanity.<sup>1</sup> The following passage, however, is especially decisive:—‘To our previous unworthiness this also is added, that though favoured by God with a knowledge of his salvation, still we contend for the interests of other men; nay, that this contentious spirit goes so far, that we even make use of the ambition of others in order to gratify it, and *commence hostilities among ourselves for the sake of foreign bishops*. And thus two serious sins are at once committed, while we certainly inflame their ambition still more, and, at the same time, seize upon this as an excuse for gratifying our own passions.’<sup>2</sup>

Several lovers of peace had exerted themselves to adjust this wide-spread Antiochian schism; among others, the great Basil, who had been a scholar of Meletius, addressed a series of letters to his former master. To these peace-makers belonged also Gregory Nazianzen, and the orations from which the above passages are quoted had the especial object of drawing off, at least, the orthodox of Constantinople from this lamentable meddling with foreign disputes. He had, partly for

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 5, p. 417.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 13, p. 422. In the same oration Gregory uses the following remarkable expressions, which characterize in a fearful manner the moral condition of his time (*Orat.* xxii. 9, p. 420): ‘It is quite shocking that no one any longer attributes to another real truth and honesty—unfeigned unsophisticated virtue, *ὅτι μὴδεὶς ἔτι πιστεύεται πιστὸς εἶναι*—even though he may actually possess an unblemished character and sincere piety; but that, as a rule, one class of men are openly bad—the other exhibit, by way of mask and outward varnish, a certain good-natured gentleness (*ἑπιεικείαν*), in order to deceive by mere outward show.

this reason, undertaken the laborious administration of the Bishopric of Constantinople, because he hoped, from this place, standing, as it did, in direct connexion with the Eastern and Western Churches, to be able to compose the difference which severed East and West. It was natural, however, that he should make the beginning with his own community. He presented himself, therefore, before them expressly for this purpose, and (after he had addressed his people with the<sup>1</sup> usual greeting, 'Peace be with you!' and had received from them the salutation (according to the liturgy), 'And peace be with thy spirit!') he thus proceeded:<sup>2</sup> 'Beloved peace! thou sweet word of greeting, which I have now invoked upon my people and received in return from them. I certainly know not, whether it were spoken by all in an honest manner, and worthy of the Spirit, and whether this outward bond has not been broken in the sight of God. Beloved peace! my daily thought and dearest jewel, who art most intimately combined with God's essence; for thus we hear in the Holy Scriptures, 'the peace of God,' and 'the God of peace'; and again, 'He himself is our peace,' and yet we honour thee not. Beloved peace! thou blessing, praised by all, but cherished by few, how long hast thou already left us! and when wilt thou again return to us?' He goes on to show how ruinously these divisions must necessarily operate, and how utterly they were opposed to the mind of the Gospel, and particularly in this beautiful passage:<sup>3</sup> 'If any one inquire of us, what we especially regard and

<sup>1</sup> Chrysost. *Homil.* iii. in *Ep. ad Coloss.* . . . ὅταν εἰσέλθῃ ὁ τῆς ἐκκλησίας προεστώς, εὐθέως λέγει· εἰρήνη πᾶσιν· ὅταν ὁμιλῇ, εἰρήνη πᾶσιν. See more on this subject in Augusti's *Denkwürdigkeit.*, vol. vi. p. 358.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 1, p. 414.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 4, p. 416.

pray for, we would unhesitatingly reply, ‘*Love*’; for our God is love, and that word he listens to rather than any other. How then can we, who are disciples of love, hate each other so bitterly? How can we, the admirers of peace, contend with each other so implacably? Can we, who are built upon the same corner-stone, be dis-united? we, who rest upon the rock, be shaken asunder? Certainly, Gregory did not reckon upon pleasing or persuading all whom he addressed, since he says<sup>1</sup> (after reminding them how the world was now divided into two parties), ‘*Whoever now stands peaceably in the middle way will be badly treated by both parties, and be either despised, or rudely attacked.*’<sup>2</sup> To that class, however, I this day belong, (I, who thus censure the other,) and with that view I have undertaken the duties of this much-disputed and much-envied Bishopric; nor shall I, therefore, be surprised, if I be roughly handled by both parties, and, after much toil and labour, be driven away, in order that, when there is no longer a wall of partition, no hindrance to their inclinations, they may resume, with all the fire of hatred, their hostile proceedings.’

It is, however, probable that these addresses of Gregory produced more and better results than he himself expected. At least, we hear no more of any dissension in the orthodox community of Constantinople, which had brought itself into such a condition; and we have an oration of Gregory’s which celebrates an amicable reconciliation between the members of his community, and probably belongs to this period of his history.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxii. 14, p. 423.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ὅσον δὲ εἰρηνικὸν τε καὶ μέσον, ὑπ’ ἀμφοτέρων πάσχει κακῶς, ἢ καταφρονούμενον, ἢ καὶ πολεμούμενον.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xxiii. p. 425. It is disputed certainly, concerning this oration, whether it belongs exactly to this period, or to an earlier



## CHAPTER IV.

GREGORY'S PREACHING ; AND HIS PRIVATE LIFE AT  
CONSTANTINOPLE.

It seems appropriate here to consider generally the nature and manner of Gregory's ministration at Constantinople, briefly to estimate his claims to eloquence, and cast a look at his private life.

As an *ecclesiastical orator*, Gregory is of great weight. In the whole course of his education, the idea of becoming an orator had floated before him, and next to the effort to become a good Christian in knowledge and in practice, Gregory knew no higher object than to be a good orator and an effective advocate for the christian faith. Already, in early youth, he went to Palestine, because the schools of rhetoric there were in especial celebrity. At Athens, rhetoric, in company with philosophy, was his principal study ; he was said even to have been a teacher of rhetoric there ; and, on his return to his native country, he was immediately obliged to exhibit his powers in that art. That whole generation

---

date—perhaps when Gregory entered upon the episcopal duties at Nazianzum, in his father's lifetime. The following passage, however (*Orat.* xxiii. 3, 4, p. 426), seems to speak tolerably plain for the first supposition : ' We were not at variance concerning the doctrine of the Godhead, but only about the proper order of church matters. Certainly it was wrong even to contend about this ; I will not deny it. But since, as men, we could not but fail on some point, this is our error : we had too great a predilection for one particular bishop, and we could not, of two excellent men, decide immediately which to choose as the most excellent, until we agreed to honour both alike. This is the extent of our fault.' It seems, therefore, that they came to a reconciliation, on agreeing to acknowledge and honour both as legitimate bishops.

regarded scarcely any art more highly than oratory; and Gregory, as a christian teacher, attached especial value to the faculty of working upon men's minds, particularly through the *word of God* and its lively oracles.<sup>1</sup> Unfortunately, Gregory's age was also the age of rhetorical display and fine speaking. Instead of the ancient simplicity, where the clear thought and the strong feeling were expressed in the most suitable and intelligible language, an artificial refinement had been introduced, which endeavoured by elaborate ornament, pompous accumulation, startling applications, ingenious antitheses, amusing playfulness, to compensate what was wanting in solidity and fulness of thought and sentiment. We find this in the most celebrated heathen rhetoricians of the fourth century; and Gregory, who was their scholar, was not able to raise himself above this show of rhetorical skill to the simplicity of true christian eloquence, strongly as he at times laments over the ornamented and theatrical style of christian elocution.<sup>2</sup> Nothing, certainly, was wanting to Gregory in the way of oratorical talent. We find in him fire and strength, rapidity and compactness of thought, heartiness and truth of feeling, frequent instances of clear poetical representation, occasionally even an elevated flight, perfect purity in the use of the Greek language, and, for the most part, a noble, well-sustained phraseology.

---

<sup>1</sup> See above, at page 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxvi. 2, p. 635; *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 301, p. 31, edit. Tollii :

Ὁ νοῦς αἰνέιτο, καὶ τοδ' ἡμῖν ἀρκέσει.  
 Οὐδὲν τὸ κομψὸν, τοις θέλουσι δώσομεν.  
 Ῥίψον τὸ κάλλος, ὃν τὰ δόγματα' ἀποστρέφῃ.  
 Ἐμφιλοσῶφει τῇ εὐτελείᾳ τοῦ λόγου.  
 Ἡμῖν ἀρέσκεις, καὶν ἀπαιδευτῶς λαλήῃς.

But with all this, the enjoyment of his orations is not unfrequently spoiled by long digressions, bitter sarcasms, laboured elegance, false splendour, and a straining after ingenious antitheses.<sup>1</sup> His funeral orations, in particular, are too declamatory and exaggerated in commendation, and would be far weightier, and more attractive, if they sketched individuals characteristically from the life, instead of exhibiting them as patterns<sup>2</sup> of all the virtues. These, however, are, in a great degree, faults of the generation, and Gregory shows in detached passages, and in whole orations (for instance, in that upon Maccabees), that under other circumstances he could have been a classic orator. Christian orators of that period always had this advantage over the heathen rhetoricians, that the topics of their addresses were more weighty, as well as more elevating. They discussed subjects by which the age was profoundly excited, and in which they themselves took a lively interest, while the heathen rhetoricians spoke in defence of an extinct worship, or upon other subjects, which could make no pretension to political or social interest.

We find in the old Fathers generally two different kinds of public addresses; that is, either free *orations*, after the manner of the heathen orators, but with very different topics; or *homilies*,—that is, popular, practical, expositions of Holy Scripture, which extended sometimes in a connected series over whole books of the Bible. This last kind was made use of by the most distinguished Fathers with particularly good results; and wherever a preacher produced any very beneficial and happy effect,

---

<sup>1</sup> For instance, *Orat.* i. p. 5; *Orat.* xxix. 20, p. 538.

<sup>2</sup> Compare, for instance, the panegyric upon Athanasius, *Orat.* xxi. 1, p. 386, and 4, p. 388.

it was by working as a practical, popular expositor of the Bible, as the announcer of the quickening truths of the Bible. That which made John Chrysostom great and worthy of imitation in this field of exertion, that which made Luther, the father of our German Church, still greater and more worthy to be imitated,—the simple and historical, but at the same time spirited and animated exposition of Holy Scripture; this, alas! we seldom find in Gregory, who, even where he has attempted it, has followed too much the style and language of the heathen teachers. We possess only one<sup>1</sup> discourse by him, which contains a properly-called exposition of a passage in the Bible. His sermons generally are free treatises upon a dogmatic subject, or the topics belonging to a Christian festival, discourses on particular occasions, refutations of heretics, panegyrics and invectives. They have no particular text to serve for a foundation or for exposition, although Bible-passages are not unfrequently interwoven with them. Too few, certainly, of Gregory's discourses are, in the proper sense of the word, *biblical*; *practical* they are, nevertheless,—at least, in numerous passages, and in a very commendable way; still they cannot be called *popular*, though they were so with Gregory's hearers, who were familiar with dogmatic definitions concerning the doctrine of the Trinity as a subject of disputation, and very eager for investigations thereon; in a far higher degree they were popular with them than they would be in our days. The homiletic rules and forms of modern Germany, our strictly-worked-out themes, our logical divisions and subdivisions, our well-ordered uniformity of the separate

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxvii. p. 645—660, upon St. Matth. xix. 1.



parts, and the like, are, generally speaking, as little to be thought of in the sermons of Gregory, Basil, Chrysostom, Augustine, as in those of Luther. Nothing, therefore, is more unfair than to detach such productions of the earlier centuries from their relative circumstances, and to judge them only by the rules which our own age has set up. It is with a view to this relation of time and place that we subjoin the following remarks upon the circumstance, that *the doctrine of the Trinity* forms the main topic of most of Gregory's discourses.

In all his public addresses, particularly those<sup>1</sup> which were held at Constantinople, it is a principal view of the orator to prove the existence of one only God, but that this Godhead, without being divided, exists in three self-depending Hypostases, or Persons, distinguished by peculiar qualities or attributes,—viz. Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; and that it therefore may be designated as well by the term Unity as Trinity (or Trinity in Unity). He opposed, with this view, those who denied the equality of nature between the Son and the Father, or the perfect Godhead and personality of the Holy Ghost; these were especially the Eunomians and Macedonians. He maintained the contest against them with such acuteness, dexterity, and success, that the name of *Theologus*,<sup>2</sup> or the defender of the DIVINITY of the

<sup>1</sup> Among the discourses of Gregory for the confirmation of the doctrine of the Trinity, the most celebrated, without doubt, are the five so-called *Theological Discourses*, *Orat.* xxvii.—xxxi. p. 487—577, in the Benedictine edit. The essential features of their dogmatic contents, as also the chief points of Gregory's teaching on the Trinity, will subsequently be exhibited in the abstract of his doctrinal opinions.

<sup>2</sup> *Gregor. Presbyt. in Vita Gregor.*, p. 149: 'Εν δὲ δογμάτων ὑψει καὶ Θεολογία, τοσοῦτον αὐτῷ τὸ περιὸν τῆς δυνάμεως, ὥστε πολλῶν κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους Θεολογησάντων ἀνδρῶν ἐπὶ σοφία

LOGOS, was given to him principally on that account. Now, it is not only to be remembered that Gregory supports the doctrine of the Trinity more upon traditional and philosophical grounds than upon Biblical proofs, but also very especially, that, through the subtile, oft-repeated expansion of this doctrine, too little room was left for the communication of all the blessed truths of the Gospel, and a taste for dogmatic disputation encouraged, rather than a charitable, christian love of peace. We must not, however, forget, 1st, that in the doctrine of the Trinity was involved the great subject of dispute, which put in commotion all classes of the christian community through the whole of the fourth century; 2ndly, that Constantinople was one of the principal arenas for this contest; 3rdly, that it was necessary that the question should then be decided, which of the antagonist doctrines should prevail; and, lastly, that Gregory, as a finished theologian and celebrated orator, was expressly called to the duties of the leader and champion of the orthodox or Nicene party.

---

γνωρίμων, μόνον τοῦτον μετὰ τὸν εὐαγγελιστὴν Ἰωάννην θεολόγον ὀνομασθῆναι. The expression 'Theologus,' as applied to S. John the Evangelist, and to Gregory of Nazianzum, has not the extended meaning which we now attach to it, but signifies one who powerfully teaches and defends the divinity of Christ, or the Logos—*i. e.* θεολογία, in its most confined sense. It is used in the same way as when one is said θεολογεῖν Χριστὸν, or to teach Christ's divinity. See Suiceri, *Thesaur. Eccles.*, sub verb. θεολογεῖν, θεολογία, θεολόγος, tom. i. pp. 1355—1360. The designation of Theologian often occurs in Gregory's writings in the more extended sense usual amongst us—*e. g.* *Orat.* xxvii. 1, p. 495; xxx. 17, p. 552; xx. 12, p. 383. Gregory also speaks of the wiser heathens as Ἑλλήνων οἱ θεολογικώτεροι, *Orat.* xxxi. 5, p. 558. When it was that Gregory first received the name of Theologus, cannot be decided with exact certainty. It appears first in the discourse of an unknown author, which is found among the works of Chrysostom. Chrysost. *Opp.*, t. vi. ; *Orat.* li. p. 401.

But for the firm stand made by Gregory and some other learned men, the anti-Nicene party would perhaps have triumphed. And could we wish it had been so? or is Arianism either more agreeable to the Bible, or better grounded on philosophy, than the doctrine of the Athanasian creed? Did the Arians, when they were predominant under Valens, show themselves to be better practical Christians than their opponents? And will not he, who cannot see any true conception of Bible-truth in the Nicene system of faith, be obliged to allow that, even as a dogmatic theory, it is to be preferred to Arianism?

At the same time, it is not to be overlooked, that Gregory, almost in every discourse, preaches quite as much the duties of active Christianity, and that it was properly the deep-seated main object of his addresses, not so much to gain the understanding of his hearers for a particular representation of the divine nature, as their hearts for the love of God and for a godly life. 'I will speak (he says)<sup>1</sup> boldly and strongly, that you *may become better men*, that you may be converted from the flesh to the Spirit, that you may be elevated in your minds after a godly fashion.'

Gregory's addresses were heard and applauded by great numbers. People of all classes and opinions, his christian as well as heathen opponents, crowded to hear him speak.<sup>2</sup> Many were attracted by the matter of his

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xix. 4, p. 365.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vit. s.*, line 1126, p. 18 :

Τοῖς δ' ἦν λόγος τις τῶν ἐμῶν ἱσως λόγων,  
Οἱ δ' ὥς ἀθλητῇ καρτερῶ προσέτρεχον,  
Οἱ δ' ὥς αὐτῶν ἔργον εἶχον ἀσμένως.

In these three lines, Gregory sketches three classes of his hearers: the first sought him on account of his eloquence; the second at-

preaching, many by the beautiful<sup>1</sup> form of his orations. Loud tokens of approbation (such as, to the disgust of every earnest preacher, were at that time customary in Constantinople and elsewhere)<sup>2</sup> frequently accompanied the public addresses of Gregory. Nay, there were ordinarily in the assembly several persons who secretly, or even openly, took notes of them,<sup>3</sup> a custom of which

tended upon him as an ardent champion for the orthodox doctrine; the third, because they had contributed to his invitation to Constantinople, and therefore looked upon him as their own work.

<sup>1</sup> It may be remarked here by the way, that the natives of Cappadocia did not generally stand in much reputation as good speakers of the Greek language. Philostratus says of the sophist Pausanias, in this relation: ἀπήγγειλε δ' αὐτὰ παχία τῇ γλώττῃ, καὶ ὡς Καππαδόκαις σύνηθες, ξυγκρούων μὲν τὰ σύμφωνα τῶν στοιχείων, συστέλλων δὲ τὰ μηχανόμενα, καὶ μηχανῶν τὰ βραχέα. ὅθεν ἐκάλουν αὐτὸν οἱ πολλοὶ μάγειρον, πολυτελῆ ὅσα πονηρῶς ἀρτύοντα.—*De Vitis Sophistar.*, ii. 13, p. 594. Olear. Of Eunomius, who was also a Cappadocian, his admirer, Philostorgius, remarks (though he extols his eloquence uncommonly) that he stammered.—*Philostorg. Hist. Eccles.*, x. 6.

<sup>2</sup> See Neander's *Chrysostom*, vol. i. pp. 117, 327; Augusti's *Denkwürdigkeiten*, vol. vi. p. 344 et seq.; F. B. Ferrarius, *De Veterum Acclamationibus et Plausu.*, lib. v. cap. 2, p. 229, edit. Mediolan. How frequently Gregory received these tokens of approbation, appears particularly from a passage in S. Jerome, in which he makes his master (Gregory) say: Docebo te super hac re in ecclesia: in qua mihi omni populo acclamante cogeris invitus scire, quod nescis. Hieron. *Epist.* lii. tom. i. p. 261.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 26, p. 767: . . . χαίρετε τῶν ἐμῶν λόγων ἱρασταὶ, καὶ δρόμοι, καὶ συνδρομαὶ, καὶ γραφίδες φανεραὶ καὶ λανθάνουσαι. Compare Bingham's *Orig. Eccles.*, vol. vi. p. 197, and Augusti's *Denkwürdigkeiten*, vol. vi. p. 351, where still farther particulars, referring to this matter, are given. I cannot, however, agree with this last-mentioned scholar, when he refers the γραφίδες φανεραὶ to official writers, who took down his speeches with Gregory's knowledge, since we cannot see with what object he could have employed official, *i. e.* specially bespoken writers. He had, without doubt, carefully written out his sermons before he preached them, and did not, as was the case also with other famous preachers of that time, deliver them *extempore*. I refer the expressions, taken altogether, only to persons who, either



mention is made in the biographies of several great Fathers of the Church; *e. g.* Origen, Chrysostom, Augustine, and others. Gregory himself, under the fiction of a dream, gives us the picture of an assembly in his Church of the Resurrection.<sup>1</sup> 'Sweet sleep embraced me, and in it a dream presented to my mind my church Anastasia, the object of my daily longing. I was seated (as it appeared to me) on a high-raised chair (the bishop's throne), yet not elated in mind, for nothing like arrogance took possession of me during the dream. Somewhat lower, on either side of me, sat the presbyters, the leaders of the flock, the chosen band of men. Next stood, in robes of dazzling whiteness, the attendant helpers (deacons), a picture of angelic adornment.<sup>2</sup> But the people arranged themselves in ranks, clustering like bees around the pulpit, and contending for nearer access.<sup>3</sup> Some of them even pressed upon the sacred doors, in order to approach nearer with their ears as well as feet. Others flocked in from the market-towns and highways to hear my discourse; while from the upper range of seats holy virgins and noble ladies bent forward with attentive ears.' Gregory then de-

---

openly or secretly, took notes of his discourses for their own private ends. It is, however, to be remarked, that Gregory's orations were not only thus taken down at their delivery, but were also transcribed by persons of respectability during his lifetime.—*Orat.* xxix. 12, p. 371, Gregory thus addresses an Imperial officer of revenue (φόρων ἀπογραφεύς): ἀπόγραφε, μη τοὺς ἐμοὺς λόγους ἐπιμελῶς, ὡν οὐδὲν ἢ μικρὸν το κέρδος, ἢ εἰς ἀκοῆς χάριν καὶ ἡδονήν, ἀλλὰ τὸν ἐμὸν λαὸν ὁσίως καὶ φιλανθρώπως.

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen* ix. *Insomnium de Anastasiæ Templo.*, p. 78, line 1 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Compare *Constitut. Apostol.*, ii. 57, 58, tom. i. p. 266, edit. Cotel. Cleric.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 26, p. 767. Gregory says of his pulpit: καὶ ἡ βιαζομένη κυκλῖς, αὕτη τοῖς περὶ τὸν λόγον ὠθιζομένοις.

scribes how his hearers, differing as they did in taste and education, had expected, some of them a plain discourse, and easily understood; others, a more laboured discussion, that should go into more profound investigations; but he, with powerful voice and ardent mind, still preached the Trinity in Unity, and combated all the opposers of the doctrine. In the conclusion, he describes the impression usually made upon his hearers by his address; how some of them had been carried away by powerful excitement to audible tokens of approbation; others, absorbed in silent meditation, would fain conceal the inward struggle of their souls; others, again, had been provoked to contradiction; so that the congregation, as a whole, might have suggested the impression of a stormy sea; yet all of them, even the most passionately excited, were again conciliated by the charm of eloquence.

It appears from some expressions of Gregory, and chiefly from the facts themselves, that through the influence of his addresses many were confirmed in their belief in the Nicene confession of faith, and many who had dissented from it were persuaded to adopt it. Granting that the circumstance, that Theodosius showed himself favourable to the orthodox, may have contributed much, nay, most of all, to the great revolution of opinion which took place about that time among the inhabitants of Constantinople, still a considerable portion of that alteration was brought about by the beautiful, ardent orations of Gregory, as much distinguished by their logical force as pervaded with a spirit of truth. But he produced this effect not only by his oratory but by his life, which gained over the hearts of men, while his refined addresses sought to convince

their understandings. If, in disputing against his opponents, his language was occasionally severe, harsh, and bitter, yet the tone and temper of his actual life was so much the milder, more benevolent, and tolerant; and it was evidently the aim of his animated efforts to reconcile by love his partially embittered antagonists, not to himself, but to the faith, with which his whole soul was filled.<sup>1</sup> From this source proceeded his truly christian conduct during the persecutions which he had to endure, especially in the first part of his residence in Constantinople. The private life, also, which Gregory led there was calculated to infuse into men's minds a feeling of good-will, and particularly of respect and reverence towards him. Without being repulsive and misanthropic, he was extremely strict and retiring, maintaining the dignity which a life of abstemious simplicity, a life dedicated to God, and entirely devoted to the unseen world, bestows. He lived alone, avoided publicity, and never obtruded himself upon the society of the great, or at court.<sup>2</sup> He practised, therefore, in this, what Julian, who knew well what gave authority to the priest, required with strictness from his heathen priesthood.<sup>3</sup> Gregory's table was so simply furnished, his apparel so entirely limited to necessity, his conversation so unaffected, his whole appearance so unpretending, so contrasted with (alas! even in those early days) the ostentatious parade of that period, that they even reproached him with a coarse, unpolished, clownish demeanour in the refined and polished Constantinople;

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, line 1415 et seq. p. 22.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vita sua*, line 1424 et seq. p. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Julian. *Epist.* 49, p. 431. *Fragment.*, p. 302.

a reproach which fell back upon those who could not recognise the noble spirit under that homely covering.

Gregory himself exhibits to us these circumstances<sup>1</sup> in a passage of his *Farewell Oration*, which is also remarkable for containing a pointedly severe side-glance at the luxury of distinguished ecclesiastics of that day: 'Men have reproached *me* (he says, in cutting irony) for my richly-furnished table, my splendid clothing, my public train and equipage, my proud bearing towards opponents! Certainly, I was not aware that I ought to vie with the first officers of state and most distinguished generals, who know not how to squander their money fast enough; nor that I was obliged to torment my body by spending on it, in waste, the goods which belong to the poor, so that poverty should be made to supply our superfluity, and the altar itself be profaned by our intemperance. I knew not that I was particularly obliged to be drawn by sleek horses, to ride in a splendid carriage, and be attended by a troop of flatterers, in order that every one might remark my approach even afar off, and be forced to move aside, or draw back out of the road, as at the approach of a wild beast! If this ignorance was wrong in me, so it has happened, and I hope you will pardon it. Choose another spiritual ruler, and one who may please the multitude, and *leave me to my solitary life, my rustic demeanour, and my God, whom even with my poor simplicity I hope to please.*'

From the previous account, it is clear that Gregory was quite the man whom the Church of Constantinople at that time required. He possessed eloquence which

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 24, p. 765. Compare therewith, *Orat.* xxvi. 6, p. 639.



captivated all who heard him ; he had received a scientific education, which he was able to make an ingenious use of in producing a thorough conviction ; he practised a strictness of life which commanded respect, coupled with a gentleness which won men's hearts, and an unwearied, ardent zeal, which overpowered all opposition. Thus he collected, united, confirmed his little community—inspired them with a new spirit of peace among themselves, of undaunted courage in things external ; drew their attention from a love of dogmatic disputing to self-knowledge, and an active, living Christianity, while at the same time he defended the doctrines of the common faith with all the acuteness of the most practised dialectician. Thus he endured patiently, and contended courageously ; and when the day of victory drew near, he made use of it without becoming insolent and eager for persecution—without allowing his attention to be drawn off from the Invisible Helper to the visible protecting hand ; from the heavenly source of life to the dispenser of earthly dignity, possessions, and enjoyment.

---

## CHAPTER V.

GREGORY'S FAME : HIERONYMUS (JEROME) BECOMES HIS SCHOLAR :  
THE RELATION IN WHICH HE STOOD TO THE PHILOSOPHER,  
MAXIMUS.

THE public labours of Gregory at Constantinople, and his private life, were certainly such as fully to deserve an honourable acknowledgment ; and his reputation, commencing as it did from that centre of the empire, and point of union between the east and west, could not

but spread most rapidly in all directions. We must, therefore, think it very natural if nearly contemporary writers, such as Ruffinus,<sup>1</sup> Ambrose, and others (not to mention those of the Eastern Church) speak of Gregory with great distinction, or, if younger theologians attached themselves to him, in order to form themselves on his discourses, and to benefit by his conversation. At that time, amid the sensible want of institutions for theological education, it became a matter of necessity for younger persons to choose especially some one of the distinguished Fathers of the Church as their guide and instructor. This practice we find existing also in the history of other sciences and arts, so long as they exist, to a certain extent, in the natural way, and no regular schools, academies, or whatever else they may be called, have been formed around them. As pupils around some great painter of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, so, at the time we are writing of, disciples, old and young, assembled round some celebrated theologian. It is true that we have properly authenticated accounts of only two scholars who enjoyed the society of Gregory at Constantinople; but of those two there was one who

---

<sup>1</sup> Ruffinus had also translated Gregory's writings into Latin. Hieronym. *advers. Ruffin.*, lib. 1, tom. ii. p. 486: *cur scribere aliqui ausus sis, et virum disertissimum Gregorium pari eloquii splendore transferre.* The same Ruffinus, in the preface to his *Translation of the Orations of Gregory*, expresses an opinion upon his merits which almost borders upon idolatrous worship. He calls Gregory 'vir per omnia incomparabilis;' and, among other things, says of him: 'Id obtinuit apud Dominum et ecclesias Dei meriti, ut quicumque ausus fuerit doctrinæ ejus in aliquo refragari, ex hoc ipso, quia ipse magis sit hereticus arguatur. Manifestum namque indicium est, non esse rectæ fidei hominem, qui in fide Gregorio non concordat.' A lamentable error surely, if any mere mortal man, with his doctrinal opinions, is to be regarded as the rule and standard of the true faith!

outweighs many others—*Hieronymus*, or S. Jerome, the most learned of the Western Fathers. When now approaching his fiftieth year, Jerome, attracted by the fame of Gregory, travelled from Syria to Constantinople, not only to hear his public addresses, but also, and particularly, to profit by his domestic instruction in the expounding of Scripture. The master was not much older than the scholar; and the scholar was himself already famous as a learned man. Jerome, nevertheless, never speaks of Gregory in any other terms but those of the greatest reverence. In several places of his writings he calls him, with grateful recollection, his master and catechist,<sup>1</sup> and expressly remarks, that he had learnt much from him in the exposition of Scripture;<sup>2</sup> nay, he particularly glories in his eloquent master.<sup>3</sup> Yet he relates an anecdote,<sup>4</sup> the point of which is that, in the exposition of Holy Scripture, Gregory did not everywhere express the grounds with perfect simplicity, but even employed his eloquence in a delusive way, more with a view to persuasion than conviction. When on one occasion Jerome asked his master, ‘how a difficult

---

<sup>1</sup> *Advers. Jovianum*, lib. i. tom. ii. p. 260. *Et præceptor meus Gregorius Nazanzenus* (for so Jerome is wont to write the word) *virginitatem et nuptias disserens, græcis versibus explicavit.*—*Epist. l. ad Domnionem*, tom. i. p. 235. *Gregorium Nazanzenum et Didymum in scripturis sanctis catechistas habui.*

<sup>2</sup> *De Viris illustribus*, cap. cxvii. *Gregorius, vir eloquentissimus, præceptor meus, quo scripturas explanante didici.* *Comp. Commentar. in Jesai.*, cap. vi.

<sup>3</sup> *Contra Rufinum*, lib. i. tom. ii. p. 469. *Numquid in illa epistola Gregorium, virum eloquentissimum non potui nominare? Quis apud Latinos par sui est? quo ego magistro glorior et exulto.*

<sup>4</sup> *Epist. lii. ad Nepotianum*, tom. i. p. 261. Jerome not altogether unjustly, though somewhat harshly expressed, adds the remark: ‘*nihil tam facile, quam vilem plebeculam et indoctam concionem linguæ volubilitate decipere, quæ, quicquid non intelligit, plus miratur.*’

passage in St. Luke was to be understood?' he referred him to the explanation he would give of it in the church, adding, 'there you will be forced, by the approbation of all the people, to understand what you do not now understand; or else, if you alone do not assent, you alone will be charged by all with folly.'

Jerome, moreover, gives us a remark which his master was accustomed to make on a passage in the Epistle to the Ephesians,<sup>1</sup> where the apostle finds in the true relation of the husband to the wife a type of the relation between Christ and his Church. The remark refers particularly to those words of St. Paul—'This is a great mystery,'<sup>2</sup> and is as follows: 'Observe, how great is the mystery of this clause; for the apostle, while he refers it to Christ and the Church, yet asserts that he had not so expressed it as the dignity of the testimony required. But however he may have expressed it, this I know, that the passage is full of inexpressible mysteries, and *requires a divine heart in the expositor*. But I, after the limited powers of my mind, fully believe that it is to be understood of Christ and the Church, not as if it (the type) were something higher than Christ and the Church, but because it is difficult to explain of Christ and the Church all that is said of Adam and Eve.' An expression which certainly leads us to conclude that

---

<sup>1</sup> Ephes. ch. v. 32.

<sup>2</sup> *Comment. in Epist. ad Ephesios.*, lib. iii. tom. vii. p. 661: Gregorius Nazanzenus, vir valde eloquens, et in scripturis apprime eruditus, cum de hoc mecum tractaret loco, solebat dicere: vide, quantum istius capituli sacramentum sit, ut Apostolus in Christo illud et in ecclesia interpretans, non se ita asserat, ut testimonii postulabat dignitas, expressisse: sed quomodo dixerit, scio quia locus iste ineffabilibus plenus sit sacramentis, et *divinum cor quærat interpretis*, &c.



Gregory did not exactly comprehend the meaning of the apostle in this passage, and that he stretched his illustration too far. Though this, at the same time, affords us a proof with what reverence he handled the Holy Scriptures, and what weight he attaches to this qualification of an expositor, that *he should be animated with a holy tone of mind, akin to the mind and spirit of their inspired authors.*

We have no farther information respecting Jerome's intercourse with his master.<sup>1</sup> It is probable, however, that under Gregory's guidance he conceived that especial reverence for Origen which he manifested in the early part of his career, but afterwards, frightened by the ghost of orthodoxy, so blameably denied. It is probable, also, that Gregory contributed particularly to that inclination to allegorical interpretation, which in so many instances obscured the great qualifications of Jerome for Biblical exposition. At the same time he probably conceived, in his intercourse with Gregory, a still greater partiality for the Greek Fathers, and acquired still greater readiness in the knowledge of the Greek language,<sup>2</sup> and so became better qualified for making his honoured Greek masters more accessible to the Western Christians by means of translations.

Another scholar of Gregory was *Evagrius*, from Pontus, who likewise is said to have been instructed

---

<sup>1</sup> Jerome's residence with Gregory may have lasted for two years. He came to him A.D. 379, or 380, and probably continued in Constantinople till Gregory left it. Now, as Gregory came from Nyssa to the Synod at Constantinople in the year 381, Jerome must have heard him recite his treatises against Eunomius. — Hieron. *de Vir. Illustr.*, cap. cxxviii.

<sup>2</sup> The conversation between Gregory and Jerome was carried on in Greek, as the former did not understand Latin.

mainly by him in the knowledge of Holy Scripture and in philosophy. He was Gregory's archdeacon in Constantinople, and subsequently, after sundry turns of fortune, betook himself to the solitude of the Nitriac Desert, where, besides his reputation for learning and eloquence, he especially distinguished himself as a follower of the opinions of Origen.<sup>1</sup> The instruction of Gregory had, without doubt, made him an admirer of Origen; but Evagrius did not confine himself within the limits which his master observed, who was only a moderate admirer of that great philosophical theologian, without approving all his opinions.

Gregory made an experiment quite of a different sort from his acquaintance with his grateful scholar, Jerome, in the person of a pretended philosopher, named *Maximus*, whom he somewhat thoughtlessly and too good-naturedly admitted to his intimate confidence. This person, who seems to have been of a striking external appearance, arrived in Constantinople not long after Gregory had established himself there. Belonging to the class of adventurers, of whom there was no small number at that time, this artful individual combined the rough vulgarity of a cynic, as well as the seeming elevation of a christian ascetic, with much external ornament that strongly betrayed a fondness for the vanities of the world.<sup>2</sup> Thus, to mention only one instance—he had his sleek black hair dyed auburn, and let it hang in long artificial curls over his shoulders. He wore, however, with this the coarse philosopher's mantle which the

---

<sup>1</sup> Sozom. *Hist. Eccl.*, vi. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Greg. *Orat.* xxv. in several places; and especially the *Carmen de Vita sua*, line 754, et seq. p. 12, where there occurs a detailed description of Maximus.

early christian ascetics had adopted, and carried a stout cynic-staff. He was born in Alexandria, of a family which, according to his own testimony, reckoned martyrs among its members; nay, he extolled himself as having confessed the true faith under heavy trials. What brought him to Constantinople is not quite clear; if we could believe an irritated opponent, it was<sup>1</sup> hunger, combined, probably, with quite as much of ambition.

When Maximus first came to Constantinople, he pre-possessed Gregory to the highest degree; he knew how to play the hypocrite, and to accommodate himself to the part. Being soon introduced to Gregory, he exhibited himself to him as the most courageous and zealous advocate of the Nicene creed, who had suffered much on account of his orthodoxy.<sup>2</sup> He did not fail, moreover, to be a constant attendant on Gregory's preaching, and to extol his discourses in the highest terms.<sup>3</sup> Gregory, full of good-natured confidence, and not endowed with a quick discrimination of human character (a talent which in his previous life of retirement he had not been able to acquire), gave his heart quite unreservedly to the stranger, whom he took for an honest and pious man, received him into his house and at his table, consulted him as a friend on the most important concerns,<sup>4</sup> and even allowed himself, out of

<sup>1</sup> *Gregor. Carm. de Vita sua*, line 777, p. 13.

<sup>2</sup> His orthodoxy, however, is said not to have been raised above the reach of all censure. He is charged with Apollinarianism.—Theodoret, v. 8.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 814, p. 13. Gregory quite candidly remarks how this Maximus used to praise his sermons: *Kai τῶν ἐμῶν πρόθυμος αἰνέτης λόγων*.

<sup>4</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 809, p. 13.

excessive regard for him, to commit the weakness of delivering a public eulogium upon him.<sup>1</sup>

But the unsuspecting Gregory was soon awakened from his delusion by the most painful experience. The hypocrite threw off the mask; he that had been so simple and meek made his appearance as a man of unbounded ambition and deep stratagem. It was discovered that Maximus contemplated nothing less than to overturn his patron and benefactor, and to seat himself in his place in the episcopal chair. A presbyter of Gregory's church was implicated with Maximus in this undertaking. This person, whom Gregory<sup>2</sup> calls a barbarian, not only by his origin, but also in his tone of

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxv. p. 454. This discourse, certainly, commonly bears the inscription, 'On the philosopher, *Hero*;' but it can scarcely be doubted that this *Hero* is the same person as Maximus, according to the assertion of Jerome, who might well be accurately informed on the subject, and, undoubtedly, would not have made the remark (which did not tell to his master's advantage) were it not to be depended upon as true. Hieronym. (*de Vir. Illustr.*, cap. cxvii.) reckons among the writings of Gregory, *Laudes Maximi philosophi, post exilium reversi*; quem *falso nomine* quidam *Heronis* superscripserunt, quia est et alius liber vituperationem ejusdem Maximi continens; *Quasi non licuerit eundem et laudare et vituperare pro tempore*. It would seem from this, that the superscription with the name of *Hero* is altogether a fabrication. It might be, however, that the same individual bore both names—the Latin *Maximus*, and the Greek *Hero*. At all events, Jerome's testimony as to the identity of the person is the more unexceptionable, as it is fully confirmed by internal proofs. There is no inducement to quote anything from this eulogium. I will only make this remark: The philosopher, Maximus, listened quietly to his own extravagant praises in the presence of a large audience! And Gregory himself says: 'Even in this the man shows his philosophic mind, that he allows himself to be praised, and patiently endures to be famous; for I wish not to praise him in order to please him (we know the indifference of philosophers to praise and fame), but to profit ourselves thereby; for praise should stir up an emulation in the path of virtue.'

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 825, p. 13.



mind, appears to have stood at the head of the presbyters, in immediate proximity to the bishop; and, without having ever been offended by him, was very ill-disposed towards him, probably from envy. Maximus had besides a still more powerful but distant confederate, in *Peter*, bishop of Alexandria, who, though he had greeted Gregory by letter, on his arrival at Constantinople, as the legitimate head of the christian community there,<sup>1</sup> had yet now changed his mind, to the disadvantage of Gregory. What had caused this change we are not informed; jealousy of the Constantinopolitan bishop on the part of the Alexandrian bishop was most probably at the bottom; and Peter wished to promote to the episcopal chair of the metropolis a man through whose agency he might rule over that see also. Perhaps the Meletian schism also operated on this occasion, since the Alexandrians took side with Paulinus; but Gregory befriended Meletius. In no case can we adopt the supposition of Gregory Presbyter,<sup>2</sup> who, in order to account for the conduct of Peter, imagines that the bishop of Alexandria was gained by the gold of Maximus, for effecting which, at least at the commencement of the transaction, no funds, or means of raising any, were at the command of Maximus.

Through his connexion with Peter of Alexandria, the following circumstance occurred, with the view of assisting Maximus. At first, seven persons, sea-faring men, whose services were to be commanded for a small compensation, came to Constantinople from Egypt, in order to explore the actual state of things. Gregory gives us their several names,—viz. Ammon, Apammon,

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 858, p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Vita Gregor.*, p. 146.

Harpocras, Stippas, Rhodon, Anubis,<sup>1</sup> Hermanubis. The parties who had sent these men out as spies soon followed (*i. e.* some of the Alexandrian clergy), for the purpose of supporting the views of Maximus. An accidental circumstance favoured the enterprise.<sup>2</sup> Just at that time a presbyter from Thasos came to Constantinople with a considerable sum of money, for the purpose of purchasing slabs of Proconesian marble for the adorning of a church. Maximus succeeded in wheedling him out of the money, probably by opening to him brilliant prospects. When by this means a venal multitude, who had often been loud in praise of Gregory, had been gained,<sup>3</sup> Maximus one night, while Gregory was lying sick in bed, went with his troop of followers (consisting chiefly of sailors) into the church, for the purpose of being consecrated, without any notice thereof to the community, or to those who presided over them! The proceeding was already in full progress, when, towards dawn, the clergy who dwelt near the church discovered the disgraceful enterprise. The report rapidly spread through the city. A vast number of inhabitants and strangers, orthodox and Arians, and even persons in offices of state, flocked to the church; the Egyptians, gnashing their teeth at the frustration of their design, were forced (though without altogether relinquishing it), to leave the church. They betook themselves to the dwelling of a player on the flute, in

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregor. *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 834, p. 14. Gregory playfully describes them as Egyptian deities :

Αἰγύπτου Θεοὶ,  
Πιθηκόμορφοι καὶ κυνώδεις δαίμονες.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 875, p. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 887, p. 14.

order to continue there, in a manner worthy of them, the holy ceremony they had commenced,<sup>1</sup> while they set about the important task of cutting off from the bishop they were going to consecrate, the beautiful head of hair which he had cultivated with so much pains. Such were the circumstances under which he received consecration! And thus the whole affair resolved itself into a farce, which certainly could have no influence in altering the external position of Gregory, but yet left behind so much the deeper wounds on his mind. Maximus, covered with shame, betook himself, accompanied by his Egyptian confederates, to Thessalonica, where Theodosius was stationed with his army to oppose the Goths; he was determined to make the last efforts with the emperor himself. He was, however, repulsed by him, or (if<sup>2</sup> Gregory has not exaggerated in his account) driven away in complete disgrace. Maximus on this returned to Alexandria, and, being reduced to extremes, presented himself before the aged bishop, Peter, his late protector, with a demand, ‘that he would either procure for him the bishopric which he had encouraged him to hope for, or relinquish to him his own.’<sup>3</sup> The imperial lieutenant, however, in order to put an end to the vexatious presumption of the ambitious swaggerer, banished Maximus from Alexandria.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Greg. Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 909 et seq. p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1003 et seq. p. 16.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1019, p. 16.

<sup>4</sup> The enterprises of this adventurer did not, however, end here. He betook himself to Italy, with letters which he had extorted from Peter of Alexandria, and laboured to prove to the Western bishops—and particularly Ambrose, bishop of Milan, and Damasus, bishop of Rome—1st, the regularity of his own consecration to the see of Constantinople (to which, he said, nothing was wanting but that, owing to the persecution on the part of the

Treacherously as Gregory had been treated by the Bishop of Alexandria and a portion of the Egyptian clergy, yet he appears to have been reconciled to them again; for there were in his nature, combined with a certain degree of irritability, great placability and gentleness. We have an oration by him, which is entitled, *On the Arrival of the Egyptians*.<sup>1</sup> It was delivered on the occasion of the sailors of an Egyptian fleet (which had brought the annual tribute of corn<sup>2</sup> to Constantinople) attending Gregory's church, and receiv-

Arians, it had not been celebrated in the church); and, 2ndly, the irregularity of Gregory's election. And he so far succeeded, that the Western clergy zealously applied on his account to the Emperor Theodosius, and moreover, among other things, said: In concilio nuper habito nihil habuimus, in quo de episcopatu ejus (Maximi) dubitare possemus . . . quin revera attendebamus Gregorium nequaquam secundum traditionem patrum Constantinopolitanæ ecclesiæ sibi sacerdotium vindicare. If any one wishes for an exact account of the farther fate of Maximus, let him consult Pagi's *Critica in Ann. Bar.*, ann. 379, Nos. 8—10, tom. i. p. 552; and Tillemont's *Mémoires pour serv. à l'Hist. Eccles.*, t. ix. pp. 501, 536. At a subsequent period, Maximus came out as an author, in a work wherein Gregory appears to have been occasionally attacked. The latter contented himself with playfully despatching the new author, Maximus, in a short poem (*Carm.* 148, p. 249). Among other things he says, he appeared among the writers as Saul among the prophets—that he had qualified himself for the attempt, as an ass who would play the lyre:

Λόγοι δὲ σοι τότε ἦσαν, ὡς ὄνυ λύρα,  
Καὶ βουσὶ κῦμα, καὶ ζυγὸς θαλασσίους.

Personal dislike, however, on the part of Gregory seems to have carried this censure too far. Jerome, at least, (*De Viris Illustrib.*, cap. cxxvii.) judges quite differently concerning the literary production of Maximus; if, indeed, by the *Insignis de Fide adversus Arianos Liber*, he means the same work which Gregory jests at.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxiv. p. 619 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory describes beautifully, and like a painter, the arrival of the fleet in the harbour of Constantinople.—*Orat.* xxxiv. 7, p. 622.



ing the holy sacrament from his hands.<sup>1</sup> Gregory greets these Egyptians with great joy and feeling, and repeatedly calls them *his people*, because they had received the *one* Faith from the same teachers and Fathers, and, with him, worshipped a Trinity in Unity.<sup>2</sup> He not only loads the Egyptians with praises, but also glorifies expressly their teachers, and, amongst these, Athanasius and their bishop, *Peter*. He calls this last ‘the successor of Athanasius (by him so highly venerated), not only in the episcopal chair, but also in purity of doctrine and real dignity, who still, most nobly, followed up the struggle of his triumphant predecessor for the good cause.’<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxiv. 7, p. 622: . . . . σιτοδοτοῦμεν γὰρ καὶ ἡμεῖς, καὶ σιτοδοσίαν ἴσως τῆς ὑμετέρας οὐ φαυλότερον· δεῦτε, φάγετε τὸν ἐμὸν ἄρτον, καὶ πίετε οἶνον, ὃν κεκέρακα ὑμῖν.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxiv. 6, p. 621.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xxxiv. 3, p. 620. A hesitation may be felt as to the particular time at which to place this oration. Was it delivered before Gregory discovered the ambiguous character of Peter's sentiments by the vexatious transactions with Maximus? or does it belong to the period following those transactions? and had Gregory already so entirely forgiven the Egyptians and their Bishop, as to be able to speak so strongly in their praise? The last assumption, probably, deserves the preference, as Gregory, at the very commencement of the speech, thus expresses himself: ‘I will greet the strangers from Egypt, since that is but just to those who have so readily assembled here, and *overcome all feelings of envy by the influence of a higher zeal* (τῷ ζήλῳ τὸν φθόνον νικήσαντες).’ And, again, it is confirmed by an expression in the continuation of the discourse, where Gregory offers reconciliation to his foreign hearers, and says he was willing, before so many witnesses, visible and invisible, to offer his hand to them, and to *blot out the old calumny by new acts of kindness* (καὶ ἀποδοῦμαι παλαιὰν διαβολὴν νέα χρηστότητι, § 6, p. 621). This probably refers to the harsh expressions which Gregory had uttered against Peter and the Egyptians, and for which he now again was willing to make atonement.

## CHAPTER VI.

GREGORY IS WITHHELD FROM LEAVING CONSTANTINOPLE ALTOGETHER,  
BUT WITHDRAWS HIMSELF FOR AWHILE INTO THE COUNTRY :  
HIS STRONG SENSE OF THE BEAUTIES OF NATURE.

IT was either on the day after the nocturnal farce of Maximus and his party, or soon after, that Gregory, in the course of a sermon, suffered these words to escape from him, which seem to indicate his determination to leave Constantinople.<sup>1</sup> ‘ Preserve, then, (he says,) the entire doctrine of the Three in One, which, as an open-handed father, I have communicated to you, my dear children, and think affectionately of my labours amongst you.’ Scarcely had the people heard these words, when there arose among all of them the most lively emotion, and they all united in most urgent entreaties to Gregory that he would still continue with them. Gregory was deeply affected by this proof of affection. It required, perhaps, only this expression of regard, in order again to smother in his mind that wish for a complete withdrawal which had arisen from a momentary displeasure, although he himself attests that it cost him a severe struggle. As Gregory—in the presence of the assembled congregation, thus suppliantly urging him in his beloved church, Anastasia—stood wavering in his determination, one of the people decided the matter by calling out in a loud voice—‘ Thou banishest with thee at the same time the Trinity in Unity from Constantinople.’<sup>2</sup> These

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen de Vit. s.*, line 1057 et seq. p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vit. s.* line 1100, p. 18: Συνεκβαλεῖς, γὰρ εἶπε, στανῶ τριάδα.

words filled Gregory with earnest anxiety; and he now pledged his word to the Church that he would not leave them, yet without confirming that promise (as they had desired) by an oath, for he had made a vow at his baptism never to take an oath again. He promised them, however, at least, to remain so long a time, until an assemblage of bishops, soon expected to take place, should have determined about the bishopric of Constantinople.

Great as was the love and sympathy which Gregory experienced from his congregation through the whole of this proceeding, so much the stronger was the impression made upon his mind by the behaviour of Maximus; the more implicitly he had confided in the ungrateful hypocrite, the more fearfully he had been deceived by him. The already delicate health of the pious man was still more shaken by this storm; and his deep, though slumbering, love of contemplative solitude awoke afresh so strongly, that he could not resist the impulse to withdraw himself, at least for a considerable time, into the country. The delightful neighbourhood of Constantinople was most inviting for that purpose; and Gregory was by no means insensible to the beauties of Nature; although he somewhere confesses that, whilst his mind was painfully excited, he was fain, indeed, to wander in the solitary shade of the forest, but yet could not find there that healing of his grief, which only faith, and prayer, and a clearer perception of God's dealings, imparted.<sup>1</sup> As, however, these Fathers of the Church are thought of by some as merely earnest but gloomy ascetics, it is not superfluous to show that there were

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen* xiv. p. 86.

individuals amongst them who, even on this point, had notions worthy of genuine Christianity and civilized humanity (for the Son of Man himself has given us here also the purest pattern), so that they retained a lively sense of natural beauty, and of those lessons which the finger of God has written in that large and copious book. With what delight (fondly taking in even the smallest objects) does Gregory describe the arrival of Spring, in an oration on the martyr Mamas,<sup>1</sup> whose festival fell upon the Sunday after Easter-day.<sup>2</sup> ‘All things (he says) combine, and are accumulated for the purpose of doing honour to this festive season: see how beautiful is all that meets the eye! The queen of the seasons is

---

<sup>1</sup> The martyr Mamas was, in those times, especially honoured in the regions of Cappadocia and Pontus as a holy man. His memory does not appear to have extended farther at that time. Only two natives of Cappadocia, Gregory and his friend Basil, dedicated orations to his memory. (Basil. *Opp.* i. 11, p. 185—189.) But neither of them tells us much respecting the martyr, with whose history or legend every one in those parts was acquainted. Thus much only appears from the orations of the two friends: that Mamas was said to be a Cappadocian of obscure birth; that it was related of him that he gained a livelihood as a herdsman; that on one occasion he was nourished by the milk of hinds in the solitude of the wilderness; but that, finally (though we are not informed under what circumstances), he died the death of a christian martyr. Many forged additions were subsequently made to the story. Whoever wishes to learn all the legends concerning S. Mamas, may consult the *Acta Sanctorum*, August., t. iii. p. 423. The festival of Mamas was especially celebrated at Cæsarea. It was there that Julian and his brother Gallus, whilst young men, built a church to his memory.—Sozom. *Hist. Eccles.*, v. 2; Gregor. *Orat.* iv. 25, p. 88. The speech of Gregory, from which the passage above quoted is taken, was (according to the testimony of Nicetas) delivered in a church of S. Mamas at Nazianzum. In the succeeding centuries, the reverence for this martyr spread more widely, and we find, even in Constantinople, several edifices bearing his name. See Du Cange, *Constantinop. Christiana*, iv. 6, p. 128; iv. 12, p. 174; iv. 15, p. 185.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xliv. 10, p. 841.



holding a festive pomp for the queen of days,<sup>1</sup> and brings as an offering all that is the most costly and beautiful of her stores. The sky is already brighter, the sun is already higher in the heavens, and more golden; the moon's orbit is already more cheering, and the host of stars more bright; the waves are on more friendly terms with the shore, the clouds with the sun, the wind with the air, the earth with the plants, the plants with the eye. The fountains now flow more transparent; the rivers, loosed from the bands of winter, run in fuller stream; the meadow smells sweetly; the plants swell; the grass is being mowed; and young lambs are frisking on the fresh green plains. The ship now issues forth from the haven with loud, and often with holy songs;<sup>2</sup> it is winged with sails; the dolphin swims gaily around her, snuffing up, and again blowing forth the water in delight, while it accompanies the course of the mariner. The husbandman now puts his plough in order, and

---

<sup>1</sup> The queen of the seasons is, naturally, the *Spring*; the queen of days is *Easter-day*, with which the above-mentioned festival was connected, as its octave. It might also be translated, 'The royal season celebrates a festive pomp (or procession) for the royal day.'

<sup>2</sup> . . . . σὺν κελεύσμασι, καὶ τούτοις ὡς τὰ πολλὰ φιλοζέουσιν. The expression *κελεύσματα* here doubtless signifies the cheerful songs of the sailors. Comp. Suid. *Lex.*, tom. ii. p. 293, sub verbo *κελευστής*, and Pollux in *Onomast.*, i. 96, tom. i. p. 67, where also an appropriate passage is quoted from Longus, lib. iii.: εἰς μὲν αὐτοῖς κελευστής ναυτικὰς ᾗδεν ὠδὰς· οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ κατὰ πτερὰ χοροῦ, ὁμοφώνως κατὰ καιρὸν τῆς ἐκείνου φωνῆς ἐβόων. Compare Pollux, sub verb. *τριαύλης*, iv. 71. In reference to these *christian sea-songs*, Sidonius Apollinaris (*Epist.* 10, lib. ii., the observation on which in the Parisian edition, p. 147, is worth referring to) says thus:

Curvorum hinc chorus helciariorum,  
 Responsantibus Alleluja ripis,  
 Ad Christum levat amicum *celeusma*—  
 Sic, sic psallite, nauta vel viator!

looks up in prayer to the Giver of fruits; he leads the ploughing-ox under the yoke, and divides the field with regular furrows, full of joyful hope. The shepherds and herdsmen now play their pipes in harmony; they recommence their pastoral songs, and spend the spring amongst trees and rocks. The gardener tends his plants; the fowler prepares his rods and reeds, and looks up to the boughs to spy out their feathered inhabitants. The fisherman glances through the deep water, prepares his net, and takes his seat upon the rocks. The busy bee now spreads her wings; she leaves her hive, displays her sagacious instinct, and robs the flowers of their sweetness—let her be to you a pattern of industry and wisdom! Now the bird builds its nest; one is sitting thereon, another glides softly into it, a third flits round about, making the wood ring with its note, and flying round the dwellings of men with twittering tongue. All things praise and glorify God with inarticulate voices;<sup>1</sup> for all things thanks are now offered to God by me; and thus that universal hymn is also ours, even that whose tones of praise I here express.' . . . . 'Yes, it is now (the orator proceeds, in allusion to the Easter festival)<sup>2</sup> the spring of the world, the spring of the mind; the spring for the

---

<sup>1</sup> Φωναῖς ἀλαλήτοις, properly and more strictly, 'with tones without speech,' with inarticulate tones.

<sup>2</sup> This oration was delivered by Gregory on the *Easter-octave*, which the Greeks called *καινὴ κυριακή*, or *πρῶτη κυριακή*. Gregor. *Orat.* xviii. 29, p. 350: . . . . ἡ καινὴ παρῶν ἡμέρα τῆς ἑορτῆς, ἣν οὕτως ὀνομάζομεν πρώτην κυριακὴν, μετὰ τὴν ἀναστάσιμον ταύτην ἔχοντες. Gregory gives also the name of *ἐγκαινία* to the festival. The grounds for this designation lay in this, that Easter, the Feast of the Resurrection, and of the victory over death and the grave, was considered as the commencing-point of a new spiritual creation, and therefore as beginning a new ecclesiastical

souls of men, the spring for their bodies; the visible spring, the invisible spring; even that which we shall *there* participate in, if we are *here* transformed aright, and, having been renewed, enter upon a new and spiritual life.' Many other passages might be adduced, from which we might see how Gregory combines all the natural phenomena with something higher, finding alike in all of them revelations of the all-ruling God, and rules for leading a godly life. We confine ourselves to one, where, from the unceasing harmonious order of the universe, he deduces powerful exhortations to peace and concord.<sup>1</sup> 'Now, this character of *oneness* should attune us to benevolence and peace, to the imitation of God and godly works; . . . for even the heaven and the earth, and the sea, and this whole world, all this vast and glorious creation of God (through which God is *silently* revealed and proclaimed), is only so long a well-ordered system, only so long a work of unsurpassable skill and incomparable beauty, as it maintains peace and unity with itself—as it remains within the appointed bounds of nature, never elevating one thing in opposition to another, never loosening the band of love wherewith the creative power divine has bound all together; but so soon as peace ceases to exist,<sup>2</sup> the order of the universe also ceases to

---

year. Gregory here brings the spring-tide festival into connexion with this, and glorifies Easter, as at the same time the spiritual and temporal festival of spring and renovation. Thus, therefore, the oration has a threefold purpose—a regard to Easter-festival, and exhortations to moral renovation flowing from thence; the festival of spring-tide; and the honouring of the martyr Mamas. See Augusti's *Denkwürdigkeiten*, th. 2, pp. 302, 309, where there is also to be found a translation of the whole oration.

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* vi. 14, p. 188.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ὁμοῦ δὲ τοῦ εἰρηνεύειν πέπauται, καὶ τοῦ εἶναι κόσμος.

work aright. Does it not then appear to you that the heaven, while, after an established order, it gives light to the air, and rain to the earth, obeys the laws of goodness? that the earth, while it affords nourishment, the air while it supplies breath to all that lives—and both thus everywhere support life—are types and figures of parental affection?' In this manner the orator, passing through the different kingdoms of nature, employs their striking phenomena in order to show to his hearers, that the same divine laws which prescribe love, kindness, harmony to men, are active also in nature, and speak from and through her to every susceptible mind.

Gregory was now probably well inclined to leave Constantinople altogether; but his work was still incomplete, and he would have left his recently-collected and scarcely-settled congregation in a very fluctuating condition; he determined, therefore, at the urgent entreaty of his friends, to return again to the capital, after a temporary refreshment of his soul and strengthening of his body. With what feelings he again appeared before his people, we have sufficient evidence in a special oration, beginning with these words:<sup>1</sup> 'I have longed for you, my children, and have been in like measure longed for by you; for of this I am convinced, and (if it were necessary) could even confirm it with an oath by that reputation which we have in Christ Jesus our Lord.'<sup>2</sup> Nor can any one wonder at such affection

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxvi. 1, p. 471.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory subjoins: τοῦτον γὰρ μοι πεποίηκε τὸν ὄρκον τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον,—for the form of the oath which Gregory uses is borrowed from the Apostle Paul, 1 Cor. xv. 31. On this account he did not think it incorrect to make use of it himself, although, in general, he had renounced a formal oath. (See above, p. 49.)



between you and me, for they who are influenced by one common spirit are also animated by one common love; but they who feel a like love have also a like faith. For what the one does not feel himself, he cannot well believe of the other's feelings; but he who sympathizes in feeling is also more inclined to agree in opinion—he becomes, as it were, an unseen witness of an unseen sympathy, and a mirror to the (spiritual) form of another. Therefore, I could no longer bear to be at a distance from you, although the state of affairs here has deeply afflicted and mortified me,—not only<sup>1</sup> moral and political affairs generally, but more especially those, more honoured and more dear, which relate to this holy building and this consecrated table.'

It is a fact easily to be explained, but still to be lamented, that this oration of Gregory's, which overflows with such heart-felt love for his congregation, and imparts so much that is excellent, also contains many bitter passages against the unworthy Maximus; as, for example, the following:<sup>2</sup> 'I am afraid of dangerous wolves, which, taking advantage of the darkness of night, tear the flock in pieces by seducing and vehement harangues; they watch for the favourable moment, because they cannot succeed by open force. I fear the *dogs*,<sup>3</sup> which would force themselves into the character of shepherds, and, strange to say, have prepared themselves for its duties by nothing else than that they have shorn off their hair, which they had suffered to grow

---

<sup>1</sup> That is, the whole character and behaviour of the inhabitants, so offensive to the mind of Gregory.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxvi. 3, p. 473.

<sup>3</sup> An allusion to the *Cynic*. See like passages in *Orat.* xxvi. 3, p. 474.

after a ridiculous fashion; who have neither continued dogs, nor yet become shepherds, except that, like dogs, they tear to pieces, destroy and make havoc of the labours of others.' Towards the end of the discourse he strongly declares (without any angry reference to Maximus)<sup>1</sup> that the possession of the envied bishopric of Constantinople was not an object of importance to him. 'Do they wish to thrust me from the episcopal throne? When have I ever, in present or in past time, willingly ascended it? or when have I extolled them as fortunate who have been seated on it? Would they rob me of the highest ecclesiastical dignity? *What man of sense has ever considered that point as an object of great desire?* But now, according to my view, it is the first proof of a sound understanding to escape from it altogether—this dignity, on account of which all our relative duties are disturbed and shaken—through which the whole world is involved in mutual suspicion and a foolish war, a war to which no proper name has yet been given!<sup>2</sup> *O that there were no Primate, no precedence of rank or station, no privileged predominance, so that we might be distinguished only by moral superiority!* But now, the privilege of standing on the right, or on the left, or in the middle—the higher or the lower place of honour—the walking before or in a line with others, have already furnished us with endless, foolish causes of

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxvi. 15, p. 482 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> . . . . . ὥς ὀφελόν γε μηδὲ ἦν προεδρία, μηδὲ τις τόπου προτίμησις, καὶ τυραννικὴ προνομία, ἢ ἐξ ἀρετῆς μόνης γινώσκόμεθα. It is hardly possible for any other words to express more plainly how pure a conception Gregory had formed of the character of an *evangelical teacher*, whose dignity rested on moral qualifications, and how far removed he was from resting that dignity on *hierarchical* distinction.

provocation, and brought into danger, not only the sheep of the flock, but also the shepherds, who, though masters in Israel, have not looked into this as they ought.'

How strongly the moral welfare of his community interested the heart of Gregory, is also shown by the manner in which (in this oration) he requires an account from his hearers<sup>1</sup> whether, during his absence, they had held fast the pure faith, and proved their love by their deeds; and then himself gives them an account of his care and anxiety for them during his residence in the country.<sup>2</sup> On this occasion, he sketches most gracefully the reflections which the view of the sea in a stormy state had called forth, and affords us a new proof how well he knew how to enjoy the appearances of Nature, so as to derive from them higher contemplative truths: 'I wandered alone (he tells his hearers) by the sea-side when the day was far advanced, for I have accustomed myself to disperse my cares by recreations of this sort; for the string will not bear to be always on the stretch, but requires occasionally to be loosened from the bow's end, if the archer would again use it without finding it unserviceable just when he would use it. Thus I wandered, my feet moving mechanically, whilst my eye swept over the expanse of the sea. But this generally gratifying view was not so delightful as when the dark, purple-tinted waves rolled gently forward, and sported softly and pleasantly with the shore. But how was it now? 'The sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew,' for I willingly use here the words of Scripture (S. John, vi. 18). The waves, as they are wont, increased in size as they approached from a distance—then

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxvi. 5, p. 474 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxvi. 7, p. 476.

for a moment raised themselves to their highest elevation—again sunk, and discharged themselves on the beach; or else they rushed back roaring on the neighbouring rocks, dispersing into light and frothy spray. There were now no little stones and sea-weed, no muscles and light oysters washed up, and, as it were, spit forth, while many were again absorbed by the retiring wave; but the *rocks* stood unmoved and unshaken, as if not in the least disturbed, except that the waves broke against them. From this prospect I thought I could derive a profitable lesson, and *how I might refer it all to my state of mind*, especially when I felt at all staggered at some occurrence, as has recently been the case. So I studied this spectacle not superficially, and the sight afforded me instruction.<sup>1</sup> Is not (said I to myself) the sea like our life, and like human concerns in general? for there is there also as much of angry struggle and fluctuating<sup>2</sup> instability. And the storms,—are they not the persecutions which originate from those causes, and all the unlooked-for trouble that befalls us? On this, Gregory describes, in continuation of the figure, the christian sage—how he should stand firm, like the rock in the tempestuous sea, and like the spiritual rock, Christ (1 Cor. x. 4), on which he is firmly based; how he is unshaken by the threatening embarrassments of fate. He then goes on to delineate a truly pious and wise man,—how cheerful he is in all sufferings; how from every misfortune he derives strength and nourishment for virtue; how, in time of joy, he is humble and thankful; in health, temperate, strict, active; in sick-

---

<sup>1</sup> Τὸ θέαμα παιδεύμα γίνεται.

<sup>2</sup> "Λατατον, unstable, not to be depended upon.



ness, patient; in time of wealth, benevolent and ready to give; in poverty, rich in godliness; how he meets persecution with endurance, insult with prayer, cursing with blessing, ill-treatment with concession; and how, in everything, in word and quiet deed, he appears as a teacher of love and gentleness; in short, as a follower and imitator of his blessed Redeemer.

Gregory returned to Constantinople with renewed pleasure and improved strength. He saw his zealous services crowned with more favourable results than ever, while his small community were not only more settled and more peaceable among themselves, but also increased daily in numbers from without. It only required an external impulse, which was now fully prepared for, to complete externally also the victory of the orthodox party. How that impulse was given, we shall next see.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

ARRIVAL OF THEODOSIUS AT CONSTANTINOPLE: TRIUMPH OF THE  
NICENE FAITH: GREGORY FIRMLY REFUSES TO ACCEPT THE  
BISHOPRIC.

THEODOSIUS was brought up in the christian religion, and, undoubtedly, according to the decisions of the Nicene code of doctrine;<sup>1</sup> but, after the custom of the time, he had deferred his baptism. Having already, as Cæsar, contended successfully against the Goths, he was attacked by an illness at Thessalonica, and caused himself to be baptized by Acholius, the orthodox bishop of

---

<sup>1</sup> Sozomen. *Hist. Eccl.*, vii. 4. . . . ἐκ προγόνων χριστιανίζων κατὰ τὸ δόγμα τῆς ἐν Νικαίᾳ συνόδου.

that city.<sup>1</sup> He learned on this occasion, from Acholius, with as much satisfaction that all the provinces, as far as Macedonia, were attached to the orthodox faith, as he heard with displeasure that, eastward thence, Arianism predominated, and that it had its established seat in Constantinople especially. Under the influence of that bishop, the newly-baptized emperor, while still in Thessalonica,<sup>2</sup> published that celebrated edict, whereby the Nicene faith is declared to be catholic and established, but the adherents of Arianism are loaded with reproaches, and threatened with punishment,<sup>3</sup> without considering what a different thing it was to give the word of command at the head of an army, and to prescribe laws to the conscience. That Theodosius did not at the same time proceed to inflict punishment upon the Arians, is to be attributed to political prudence, rather than genuine toleration. For the number of Arians was still so great

<sup>1</sup> Sozom., vii. 4. Socrat., v. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Sozomen says: νόμον ἐκ Θεσσαλονίκης προσεφώνησε τῷ δήμῳ Κωνσταντινουπόλεως. This, however, is not correct; since the edict referred not only to the inhabitants of Constantinople, (to whom, however, it was probably first published,) but to all the subjects of Theodosius.

<sup>3</sup> *Cod. Theod.*, lib. xvi. tit. i. l. 2. The edict thus speaks: Cunctos populos, quos *Clementie* nostræ regit temperamentum, in tali volumus religione versari, quam Divinum Petrum Apostolum tradidisse Romanis, religio usque nunc ab ipso insinuata declarat: quamque pontificem Damasum sequi claret, et Petrum Alexandriæ episcopum, virum Apostolicæ sanctitatis: Ut secundum Apostolicam disciplinam, evangelicamque doctrinam *Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti unam Deitatem sub parili Majestate, et sub pia Trinitate credamus*. Hanc legem sequentes, *Christianorum Catholicorum* nomen jubemus amplecti: Reliquos vero *dementes vaesanosque* judicantes, *haeretici dogmatis infamiam* sustinere: nec *conciliabula* eorum *ecclesiarum* nomen accipere, divina primum vindicta, post etiam motus nostri, quem ex *caelesti arbitrio* sumpserimus, ultione *plectendos*.—Dat. iii., Kal. Mart. Thessal. Grat. et Theod. A. A. Coss.

in the whole empire, especially in the chief city, that, if provoked by violence, they might easily become dangerous to him. Yet many overheated members of the orthodox body (who wished to see everything changed at a stroke, to their advantage) do not appear to have been satisfied with this enforced moderation of Theodosius; in this view, however, Gregory did not participate.<sup>1</sup>

On the 24th of December, A.D. 380, Theodosius came to Constantinople, and two days after he gave to the bishop, Demophilus, the head of the Arian party in Constantinople, the bitter choice, either to adopt the Nicene confession of faith, and unite himself to the Catholics, or to vacate the churches of the metropolis.<sup>2</sup> Demophilus was firm enough to choose the latter alternative. After considering how difficult it would be to withstand power,<sup>3</sup> he assembled his followers in the church, and, presenting himself before them, said, ‘My brethren! it is written in the Gospel, ‘if they persecute you in one city, flee ye to another.’ Since now the emperor shuts us out from the churches, be it known to you, that to-morrow we shall meet outside the city.’<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Greg. *Uarm. de Vita sua*, line 1287, pp. 20, 21. ‘Gregory rather praises Theodosius for having done no violence to men’s conscientious convictions—a praise which would have been no slight merit had Theodosius but deserved it. In reference to the freedom of religious conviction, Gregory says on this occasion. (line 1293, p. 21)—

Οὐ γὰρ κατείργειν, ἀλλὰ πείθειν ἔννομον  
Εἶναι νομίζω, καὶ πρὸς ἡμῶν τι πλέον  
Αὐτῶν τ’ ἐκείνων, οὕς θεῶ προσάξομεν.

<sup>2</sup> Sozom., vii. 5; Socrat., v. 7.

<sup>3</sup> . . . . λογισάμενος, ὥς χαλεπὸν πρὸς κρείσσονας ἀντιπίπτειν.

<sup>4</sup> Socrat., v. 7.

With these words he left the church. The Arians had been forty years in possession of the churches of Constantinople.<sup>1</sup>

Gregory, on the contrary, the courageous defender of the now highly-favoured faith, must naturally have been most graciously received by Theodosius. The emperor greeted him, at their first meeting, with extreme respect, conversed for a long while with him, and closed the interview with these words:<sup>2</sup> ‘This temple’ (the principal church of Constantinople) ‘God delivers up to thee by our hand, as a reward for thy devoted labours,’ words which Gregory (as he himself says) may have thought incredible, had they not afterwards been verified by the result. In fact, such a transfer of the principal church of Constantinople, from the hands of the Arians into those of the orthodox, might well appear, even with the intervention of the imperial power, something still doubtful, on account of the numbers of the Arian party. A vast portion of the inhabitants of Constantinople were thrown into a state of stormy excitement by this order of the emperor; and when the day arrived on which the orthodox should actually take possession of the church,

---

<sup>1</sup> The great body, however, of the Arians did not at first give the matter up as lost. They held meetings, and endeavoured, by means of persons moving in the immediate society of the emperor, who were favourable to Arianism, to work upon Theodosius. The emperor was already inclined to enter into a conference with Eunomius, the celebrated defender of Arian opinions, and then living in retirement at Chalcedon; but he was kept from doing so by the empress, *Flaccilla*, who was over-anxious for the orthodoxy of her husband.—Sozom., vii. 6. At the same time the orthodox Bishops offered everything, in order to confirm the emperor in his Nicene convictions, and employed for that purpose some very palpable motives, one of which is also adduced in Sozomen, vii. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1305 et seq. p. 21.



all the streets and public places were filled with persons of all ranks and ages, with men and women, old men and children, who lamented, wept, shouted, and threatened. Constantinople resembled a city that had been taken by assault.<sup>1</sup> The *church of the Apostles*<sup>2</sup> was

<sup>1</sup> Gregor. *Carm. de Vita sua*, lines 1325—1336, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Tillemont, the Benedictine editors, and others, assume that it was the *church of S. Sophia* which was given up to Gregory as the chief church of the city. They give, however, no proof of this, and I doubt much that any can be given. I rather believe, on the following grounds, that it was not the church of S. Sophia, but the church of the Apostles. The church of S. Sophia is neither expressly named anywhere in Gregory's writings, nor is there any actual allusion to it. The church of the Apostles, on the contrary, is several times noticed by him. He not only mentions it as the celebrated burying-place of the Constantine family (*Orat.* v. 17, p. 159: τὸν ἀοίδιμον τῶν Ἀποστόλων σηκόν, οἱ δὲ τὸ ἱερόν γένος καὶ ὑπεῖξαντο καὶ διαφυλάττουσι), but he also expressly designates it as the church in which he preached. In *Orat.* xlii. 26, p. 767, he takes leave of the Apostles, as dwellers in the church: χαίρετε Ἀπόστολοι, ἡ καλὴ μετοικία, οἱ ἐμοὶ διδάσκαλοι τῆς ἀληθείας . . . ; and in the poem upon his beloved church, Anastasia, the only church mentioned in connexion with it is that of the Apostles. In *Carm.* ix. line 57, p. 79, Gregory thus extols Constantinople :

Νηοῖς οὐρανίοισιν ἀγάλλεται ἔξοχον ἄλλων.  
 Νηοῖς τοῖς ποτ' ἐμοῖς, νῦν γε μὲν ἄλλοτρίοις.  
 Σὺν τοῖς καὶ μέγαλυνον ἔδος Χριστοῦ μαθητῶν,  
 Πλευραῖς σταυροτύποις τέτραχα τεμνόμενον.  
 Ἄλλ' οὐ τόσσος ἐμοὶ γε πόθος καὶ ἄλγος ἐκείνων,  
 Ὅσος Ἀναστασίης, Βηθλεὲμ ὑστατίης.

Here Gregory notices, among the most distinguished temples of Constantinople, only the Apostles' Church—adding, that that was not so dear to him as that of Anastasia. He would certainly have mentioned the church of S. Sophia had it been the cathedral. Therefore, under the words, ὁ μέγας ναὸς οὗτος καὶ περιβόητος (*Orat.* xlii. 26, p. 766), I understand, not the church of S. Sophia, but that of the Apostles. Both these churches, as it is well known, were built by Constantine the Great; but the Apostles' Church, which Constantine had at the same time destined for his burying-place, was manifestly distinguished by greater splendour and a certain show of preference; which also the narrative of Eusebius (*De Vita Constantini*, iv. 58—60) displays very

strongly occupied by well-armed soldiers. Gregory himself, who was just then particularly bowed down by sickness, walked, breathing feebly, but full of confidence, by the side of the stately, warlike emperor, towards the temple. The morning was gloomy. The heaven had concealed its light behind heavy clouds, and appeared unfavourable to the enterprise. The Arians already began to exult in this sign from heaven, and the orthodox to be dispirited ; when it came to pass, that as the emperor and bishop, with their followers, entered with songs of praise the holy building, and raised their hands to God in prayer, a bright sunbeam broke through the clouds, and filled the temple with the most cheerful light. The orthodox now thought they might be fully satisfied, that God also approved and favoured their proceedings. This last circumstance, in particular, is noticed by Gregory with great vivacity, in his poem about his own life (line 1336—1370).

Amid the joy of this victory, the assembly had but one wish, which they also soon made known by loud

---

pointedly. The church of S. Sophia, even as it was renovated and enlarged by Constantius (Socrat., i. 16), does not appear to have surpassed that of the Apostles. It was not till the time of Justinian that the church of S. Sophia became the most splendid monument of the renovated Greek style of architecture, which combined within its vast extent all that the art and pomp of those times could produce. It is from that date that it appears to have become decidedly the principal church of Constantinople. Notices respecting the earlier history of both churches are to be found in Du Cange, *Constantinopolis Christiana*, iii. 1, p. 1; iv. 5, p. 105: and respecting their ancient and modern history at the same time, in Von Hammer's *Constantinopolis*, vol. i. pp. 335, 388, et seq. At all events, if the question is about a cathedral-church at Constantinople towards the end of the fourth century, the choice can only be between the church of S. Sophia and the church of the Apostles. I would, however, decidedly vote for the latter.

cries,—viz. that Theodosius would give them Gregory as their actual bishop. A tumultuary call of the whole multitude, even of the women and persons in authority who were present, announced this desire. The emperor, perhaps, was not disinclined to comply with the wish, but Gregory could not make up his mind to accept the actual appointment to the bishopric, or, at least, to allow himself to be elected in this way. In the meanwhile, he was so seriously indisposed that he felt himself quite incapable of addressing the people. He therefore requested another clergyman to speak to the assembly in his name, in the following words: ‘Cease, I pray you, cease from this loud call! Now, before all things, is the time for thanksgiving—hereafter for other matters.’ This decided refusal was received very favourably, as well by the emperor, as by the people, who were now again appeased. (*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1371—1391, p. 22.) All ended quietly and without violence; only *one* sword was drawn, and that put again without bloodshed into its sheath.<sup>1</sup> After the orthodox party had been put in possession of the principal temple and other churches and ecclesiastical buildings in Constantinople, the church property also, and revenues, which were before under the control of the Arians, passed over to the dominant party; and Gregory undertook the management of the same. This church property was, as Gregory himself indicates, very considerable, the valuables, in vessels and the like, extremely rich and splendid:

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1394, p. 22 :

“Ὅσον γυμνωθὲν ἐν ξίφος, πάλιν ἔσω  
Πεσεῖν . . . . .

Τὸ δ' ἐκ τοσούτων χρημάτων ἔρρυλλομένων,  
 ὦν οἱ μέγιστοι τῶν ὅλης οἰκουμένης  
 Ναοῖς ἐξησαύριζον ἐκ παντὸς χρόνου,  
 Κειμηλίων τε καὶ πόρων τῶν πάντοθεν.

Gregor. *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1475, p. 23.

That Gregory managed these riches conscientiously we may be sure, from his truly exalted notions concerning selfishness and avarice.<sup>1</sup> Indeed, his numerous enemies would have certainly brought bitter reproofs against him if he had not done so. His highest gratification, like that of his mother, consisted in acts of benevolence. He dared to boast, and with justice, that if all the clergy thought as he did in reference to the possessions of the Church, things would not be in so sad a condition as they were in many Churches:

Εἰ πάντες οὕτως ἐφρόνουν εἰς χρήματα,  
 Οὐκ ἂν ποτ' οὐδεν τοῖον ἐν ἐκκλησίαις  
 Πήρωμ' ἀνευρεῖν.

*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1491, p. 24.

The displeasure of the Arian party at this transaction was not strong enough to break out in actual resistance. The joy of the hitherto-oppressed orthodox party was the livelier on that account; and, as the convictions, especially the religious convictions of—alas!—so large

---

<sup>1</sup> We may here rely entirely on the known sentiments of Gregory. His character was so completely raised above suspicion of selfishness, that he does not even hesitate to remark, how all the riches of the Church were delivered up to him, without finding as much as a catalogue thereof among the papers of the former bishops—without a treasurer giving any account of them, and without having himself called in any stranger (ξένον, probably a secular officer) to make a list of them, because he did not wish to make the possessions of the Church thus to become generally known.—*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1479 et seq. p. 23.



a portion of mankind take their tone from external circumstances, that is to say, from the influence of the ruling power, so now many persons were found, who had hitherto thought it advisable to be Arians, but who soon saw their error, and, being converted by such palpable arguments, joined in the triumph of the orthodox.<sup>1</sup> Gregory soon found an opportunity of expressing his joyful feelings at this change of things. On a martyr's festival, which the Arians were not in the habit of keeping, he came forward, for the first time, with an oration in the church which had been transferred to him, and at the same time introduced the banished martyrs afresh into the temple. On this occasion he delivered a short address,<sup>2</sup> in which he thanks the martyrs for having so triumphantly assisted the professors of the pure faith in their recent contest.<sup>3</sup> Much that is excellent is contained in particular parts of this oration; it is, nevertheless, unpleasant to find it over-seasoned, here and

---

<sup>1</sup> Such persons, bishops and laymen, Gregory points to in very strong language. *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 335, p. 24. Toll. :

Τὴν πίστιν ἀμφιδέξιοι, καιρῶν νόμους  
Οὐ τοῦς Θεοῦ σέβοντες.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxv. pp. 629—632.

<sup>3</sup> . . . . εὐγε, ὦ Μάρτυρες· ὑμέτερος καὶ οὗτος ὁ ἄθλος· ὑμεῖς νενικήκατε τὸν πολὺν πόλεμον, εὖ οἶδα. If the remark made above be correct, that Gregory for the most part delivered his orations in the church of the Apostles, we have then probably to understand here, the apostles under the name of the martyrs. Nay, all the apostles were considered martyrs (even S. John, though after a different notion of martyrdom); and we have the Apostles' Church expressly called μαρτύριον by Eusebius (*De Vita Constant.*, iv. 58). I myself, however, do not attach much probability to this supposition, and would not omit to refer the inquirer to the *Acta Sanctor. Major.*, vol. ii. p. 409, where the Feast celebrated on the 13th of December is appropriated to the Armenian martyrs—Eustratius, Auxentius, Eugenius, Mardarius, and Orestes.

there, with too harsh reproaches and sallies against the now conquered Arians.<sup>1</sup> One might suppose, from particular expressions which we here meet with, that on the side of the Arians there was nothing but what was base and diabolical, and, on the orthodox side, pure light and freedom from error; whilst it is manifest that there was a mixture of both on both sides. And we cannot suppress the wish that Gregory could *always*, and *everywhere*, have exhibited that mild forbearance which he generally recommended so strongly by word and deed, and which, in the sequel, he exercised in so noble a manner. As a proof of this, an incident that occurred somewhat later may here be related, as it is adapted to reconcile us again with Gregory, and to prove that those bitter and harsh expressions against enemies and offenders, which we occasionally hear from his mouth, did not proceed from habitual acrimony of disposition, but from an excitable temperament.

Somewhere about this time, Gregory was confined to his bed by sickness,<sup>2</sup> when there entered into his chamber some of the common people, and among them a young man in a black dress, with a pale face and long hair. Gregory, alarmed, made a movement as if he would jump out of bed. The men, after they had said something civil, by way of greeting, again retired; but the young man stayed behind, threw himself at the feet of Gregory, weeping, speechless, beside himself. To the bishop's questions, 'Who art thou?—whence comest thou?—what dost thou want?' he replied only with still louder lamentation. He shed tears, he sighed, he wrung

---

<sup>1</sup> See particularly *Orat.* xxxv. 2, 3, pp. 629, 630.

<sup>2</sup> *Greg. Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1442—1475, p. 23.

his hands, so that Gregory himself was moved to tears. When at length he had been removed by force, one of those who were present said, 'That is thy murderer!'<sup>1</sup> God has guarded you from his intended blow, and he is now come hither, impelled by his own conscience—a wretch in his design of murder, but generous in his self-accusation; his tears make an atonement for the blood he intended to shed.' Gregory, shuddering at this account, said to the young man, 'God preserve thee! That I, whom He preserveth, should bear myself mercifully towards thee, is nothing great. Thy daring deed hath made thee mine; see, then, that thou henceforth walk worthily, as one who belongeth to me and God.' This mild forbearance operated with extraordinary influence upon the inhabitants of Constantinople, and won many hostile hearts to friendship with Gregory.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

GREGORY PERSISTS IN REFUSING TO ACCEPT THE EPISCOPAL DIGNITY :  
HIS FRANK BEHAVIOUR TO ALL CLASSES OF PERSONS.

GREGORY had certainly escaped with success from the first ebullition of popular favour, when, on taking pos-

---

<sup>1</sup> A plot, therefore, had been formed against his life by one of his most violent opposers—on what occasion we know not exactly. It was probably on the day when the orthodox party took possession of the principal church under the protection of an armed force. The words in the *Carmen de Vita sua*, line 1394, p. 22, may refer to this: 'Only *one* sword was drawn, but that was soon replaced in its sheath.' Certainly he must have been an extremely bold man who would have dared to attack Gregory on that day, when he was so strongly guarded. The young man, however, to whom the above account relates, appears to have been a person of a fiery and wild energy.

session of the church of the Apostles, he was to have been forced to accept the episcopal dignity; but there is great probability that the people renewed that effort with redoubled violence, and that they one day took him by surprise, and placed him, in the literal sense of the word *by force*, on the episcopal seat. A passage in his thirty-sixth oration seems decidedly to point to this, where he says, ‘This fact (namely, that Gregory could not always treat in a very friendly manner his obtrusively zealous admirers) was abundantly shown at your recent act of violence towards me, when you (that is the people), carried away by zeal and passion, and regardless of all my reclamation and complaint, seated me on the episcopal seat, an appointment about which I am not quite resolved whether I should speak of it as hierarchically binding, or as a mere act of tyranny and compulsion.<sup>1</sup> But you have even seated me there, performing an illegal act, from pure zeal and affection. On that occasion, I expressed my anger with such special heat against some persons, that they have been alienated from me, and their love has suddenly turned into hatred!’<sup>2</sup>

This occurrence gave Gregory occasion to declare himself openly concerning the bishopric of Constantinople. It is in his thirty-sixth oration that he does this. He first of all puts the question, what could it be that thus attached his hearers to him, like iron to the

---

<sup>1</sup> . . . . τὸν οὐκ οἶδ’ εἴτε τυραννικὸν χρὴ λέγειν, εἴτε ἀρχιερατικόν. There is here, perhaps, some play upon words—that he did not know whether to designate the episcopal seat as that on which it is necessary a man should be placed by force, or as that from which he might rule as a free agent.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxvi. 2, p. 636.



magnet, since his discourses contained nothing particularly pleasing or attractive, and since *he* did not affect to announce any new doctrine, but trod in the old footsteps? It consisted plainly in the consideration of a certain truth, in which the minds of his hearers were already interested, who, in part at least, were scholars of the great bishop of Alexandria, the zealous defender of the doctrine of the Trinity in Unity. He accounts, however, for the affectionate, zealous attachment of his congregation from the following causes:<sup>1</sup> First, because they had themselves called him to his charge, for it was in human nature that every one should love most his own work, his own creation, his own possession—a remark which is very striking, and is confirmed in all times by the fact, that those congregations which call and elect their ministers, show a much higher degree of interest in them than those on whom they are imposed by superior authority. In the next place, they were pleased that he had nothing about him that was extravagant, violent, or theatrical, showy or flattering, but lived a retired, modest, temperate philosophical life. And, finally, it could not escape their notice with what annoyances, sufferings, and persecutions he was forced to contend, for the sake of the pure doctrine. But the sympathy thus called forth produced and elevated affection.

After these considerations, Gregory defends himself against the charge of seeking to obtain the bishopric of Constantinople.<sup>2</sup> He must indeed (he says) be ashamed, if at his age, bowed down as he was with infirmity, he cherished such views; and strange were it

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxvi. 3, p. 636.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xxxvi. 6, p. 638 et seq.

to reproach him with lusting after the wife of another (*i. e.* the bishopric of *Constantinople*), when he had never wished for that which was his own (*i. e.* the bishopric of Nazianzum, or rather of Sasima). That, however, he had hastened to Constantinople in order to sustain the true faith, which was then in a tottering condition, deserved more praise than blame.

This same discourse, from which the above is taken, and which was listened to by the emperor and court, and many distinguished and highly-educated persons, contains expressions<sup>1</sup> which so beautifully convey the frank and open sentiments of the christian teachers of that period (in which especially the noble-minded John Chrysostom spoke and laboured), that we cannot forbear to translate a portion of it, respecting which we may be allowed to wish, that it may be read by those who have the high calling of impressing the truth upon the hearts and minds of princes!

‘Ye princes, (he is addressing the emperor and the princes,) do honour to your purple!—for our discourse dares give laws even to the lawgivers—reflect how much is entrusted to you, and what is God’s great hidden purpose with regard to you.<sup>2</sup> The whole world is subject to your hand, kept together and governed by a little sceptre and a small piece of cloth (the imperial purple mantle). All that is above in heaven is God’s; all that is here below is yours. Be ye therefore, (that I may say something even bolder,) be ye also as

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xxxvi. 11, 12, p. 642 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> . . . . γινώσκετε ὅσον τὸ πιστευθὲν ὑμῖν, καὶ τί τὸ μέγα περὶ ὑμᾶς μυστήριον. Κόσμος ὅλος ὑπὸ χεῖρα τὴν ὑμετέραν, διαδήματι μικρῷ καὶ βραχεῖ ῥακίῳ κρατούμενος.

gods,<sup>1</sup> for the good of your subjects. ‘The king’s heart is in the hand of the Lord;<sup>2</sup> so it is written, and so also we believe. Let, then, your power be founded thereon, (*i. e.* on God,) and not upon the abundance of gold, or upon armed troops.

‘But ye, who surround the princes and the throne, be not proud of the power which is committed to you, nor look upon that which is transitory as eternal. Be faithful to the princes, but first of all to God, and for the sake of those who are given up and entrusted to you. Ye who glory in the nobility of your family, be noble in your moral habits; or I shall be obliged to say something which, though certainly unpalatable, is yet to be accounted wholesome. Then only would your order be truly and in the highest sense noble, when no letters-patent of nobility shall have introduced into your body what is mean and ignoble.<sup>3</sup>

‘Ye sages and philosophers, with venerable beards and mantles, ye professors and philologists, ye orators, who catch at the applause of the vulgar, truly I know not how you came to be called *wise men*, since the first

---

<sup>1</sup> Literally so, *Θεοὶ γενέσθε*; not as flattery, but expressed after a manner familiar to Gregory, according to which *the holy* and *the godlike* in man is designated *as God*; but here it is attended with the additional idea of *godlike beneficence*.

<sup>2</sup> Proverbs, xxi. i.

<sup>3</sup> *i. e.* when no unworthy persons are raised to the rank of nobles; when it is only an order of genuine merit. The Greek original is somewhat difficult: *τότε γὰρ ἀληθὲς εὐγενέστατον ἦν ἂν τι τὸ ὑμέτερον, εἰ μὴ καὶ δέλτοι τοὺς δυσγενεῖς ὑμῶν ἐνέγραφον* (literally, ‘if the patents of nobility did not also enrol the unworthy amongst you’). That *δέλτοι*, with Gregory, meant ‘patents of nobility,’ is proved by another passage, where he censures those who are proud of their new nobility. *Uarm.* viii. line 29, p. 76:

Οὗτος δ’ εὐγενέτης τύμβοις φρονέων μεγάλοισιν,  
Ἥ δέλτοις ὀλίγησι νεόγραφον αἶμα λελοχώς.

principle (of all wisdom) is wanting to you. And ye rich men, hear him who saith—"If riches increase, set not your heart upon them." (Psalm lxii. 10.) Know that ye are trusting to an uncertain thing. Lighten thy ship somewhat, that thou mayest sail the lighter; probably thou art wresting something from thy enemy, to whom all that thou hast shall fall a prey. And ye lovers of pleasure, withdraw something from the body and bestow it on your soul; see, the poor man is nigh at hand—relieve the sick, spend freely on him some portion of your superfluous wealth. What need is there you should both suffer—thou from repletion, he from hunger?—thou from intemperance, he from thirst?—thou, while thou loadest thyself with satiety and over-fulness, he while he totters from exhaustion and wasting sickness? Overlook not the poor 'Lazarus' in this life, that you may not hereafter become 'the rich man in torment.' And ye, inhabitants of the great city, the first next after the first (Rome), and ye who scarcely even allow that priority, be ye then the first, not in wickedness, but in virtue; not in disorderly living, but in a life of well-ordered sobriety. For how disgraceful is it to rule over the cities, but suffer yourselves to be mastered by your lusts; or to be wise and intelligent in other things, whilst by horse-races, and play-going, and betting, and hunting, you reduce yourselves to such folly and madness, as to look upon such things as the proper business of life? and thus the first of cities, which properly ought to be a pattern to others in all that is good, is become a city full of mere triflers! O that ye would put off that character, and be indeed God's city! O that your names stood written in God's register now, and that hereafter ye may be presented,



together with us, pure and in a pure form, to the great Builder of cities! Such are the blessed instructions I bring unto you, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; to whom be honour and glory and power, for ever and ever! Amen!

Thus freely, and independently of the influence of the great and mighty, did Gregory *speak*; and in the same spirit he also *acted*. We have seen how graciously and encouragingly he was received by Theodosius.<sup>1</sup> It would therefore have been an easy thing for him to obtain all the favour and influence of a court-ecclesiastic. But this had no charm for one like Gregory; on the contrary, he considered it becoming his own dignity, and the dignity of Him whom he served, to visit the court, and especially the great men of the court, but seldom; and he left to others of the clergy, whom he despised, to mount by flattery to honours and preferment.<sup>2</sup> Gregory had the pride of one who would not obtrude himself onerously upon a great personage.<sup>3</sup> Yet he did

<sup>1</sup> Gregory was anything rather than blinded by the favour which he had experienced at the hands of Theodosius. He expresses himself very quietly concerning the emperor—nay, he betrays a certain coldness, when, for instance (*Carmen de Vita s.*, line 1282), he says of him, ἄνθρωπος οὐ κακὸς μὲν, κ.τ.λ. ('not a bad sort of man,' &c.)

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen de Vita s.*, line 1424 et seq. p. 23; and *Carmen advers. Episcopos*, in many passages. These ecclesiastics, to whom religion was an object of avarice and ambition, are called by Gregory χριστέμποροι, traders in Christ. *Carm. de Vita s.*, line 1756, p. 28.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 19, p. 761: . . . εἰ δυναστείαν ἠγάπησα, ἡ θρόνων ὕψος, ἡ βασιλείων πατεῖν αὐλάς, μηδὲ ἄλλό τι λαμπρὸν ἔχοιμι, ἢ ρίψαιμι κεκτημένους. And especially *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1432, p. 23:

Μόνος ποθεῖσθαι μᾶλλον ἢ μισεῖσθ' ἔγνω,  
Καὶ τῷ σπανίῳ τὸ σεμνὸν ἡμπολησάμην,  
Θεῶ ταπολλὰ καὶ καθάρσει προσνέμων,  
Των δὲ κρατούντων τὰς θύρας ἄλλοις διδούς.

not so bear himself in this respect as to play the part of an arrogant, retiring, eccentric person; but when he was invited, he appeared even at the imperial table, and at the other entertainments of the great men. That, however, such hours did not leave upon his mind the most agreeable recollections, is shown by a poem<sup>1</sup> which he wrote at a subsequent period in his retirement. In that composition he extols his heavenly freedom, in contrast with those painful moments when he sat silent and melancholy at the imperial table—when he was obliged by courtesy to press respectfully the hands which had shed so much blood—and when, as a special act of grace, he was permitted to touch<sup>2</sup> the imperial beard. With as little satisfaction does he speak of the birthday, wedding, and funeral-feasts, which he could not avoid attending.<sup>3</sup> It may be fancied that Gregory, who had given up so great a portion of his life to solitary retirement, did not possess the heart and accomplishment of partaking in such things in a cheerful but innocent manner; but undoubtedly it was rather the case that his mind (devoted as it was to the higher good) made these pleasures insipid to him, while his strict earnestness rendered the luxury and extravagance that prevailed on such occasions offensive and objectionable to him. He was like an Elijah, or a John the Baptist, among that thoughtless generation. Far happier were the days he

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen* ix. pp. 79—81.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen* ix. line 59 :

Οὐ θνητοῦ βασιλῆος ὁμέστιος ὥς τοπάροιθεν  
Γρηγόριος θυλάκῳ ἤρα φέρων ὀλίγην.

And again, line 65 :

Οὐδὲ χέρας φονίους προσπτύξομαι οὐδὲ γενείου  
Δράζομαι, ὥς τ' ὀλίγης ἀντιτυχεῖν χάριτος.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen* ix. lines 67—75.

spent in calm repose, than they would have been in those brilliant circles. Even the solitary hours of night he gladly devoted to prayer, holy songs, and pious contemplations, deriving spiritual strength for his active duties from the source of all that is spiritual and all that is strong.<sup>1</sup>

---

## CHAPTER IX.

THE SECOND ŒCUMENIC COUNCIL AT CONSTANTINOPLE IN THE  
SPRING OF A.D. 381 : GREGORY IS REGULARLY CHOSEN BISHOP :  
HIS REASONABLE PROPOSALS ARE NOT LISTENED TO.

AFTER Theodosius, by several edicts, especially that of January the 10th, A.D. 381,<sup>2</sup> had expelled the Arians, and the more insignificant parties connected with them, from all church property, and made the professors of the Nicene faith the sole predominant party, he wished to give complete sanction to this measure by an assembly of bishops from all parts of the Eastern empire, in which the ancient rule of faith might be renewed, and, if it were necessary, more exactly defined and completed. At the same time, he wished to see some

---

<sup>1</sup> He describes this his ascetic life in several passages ; but particularly in *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 54, p. 9 et seq. ; line 576, p. 54 ; and *Carm. iv.* p. 72.

<sup>2</sup> *Cod. Theod.*, lib. xvi. tit. v. *de Hæret.*, l. 6, where, among other things, we read : Nullus hæreticis mysteriorum locus, nulla ad exercendi animi obstinatoris dementiam pateat occasio. . . . *Nicænæ* fidei, dudum a majoribus traditæ et divinæ religionis testimonio atque adsertione firmatæ, observantia semper mansura teneatur ; *Photiniane* labis contaminatio, *Ariani* sacrilegii venenum, *Eunomiæ* perfidiæ crimen et nefanda, monstruosis nominibus auctorum, prodigia sectarum *ab ipso etiam abolerantur auditu* . . . Cunctis orthodoxis episcopis, qui *Nicænam* fidem tenent, *Catholicæ ecclesiæ* toto orbe reddantur. Dat. iv. Id. Januar. (A.D. 381.)

settled arrangements made respecting the bishopric of his chief city, Constantinople. For these purposes the council of the Church was actually convoked by him at Constantinople in the spring of the year of our Lord 381;<sup>1</sup> an assembly which had been talked of for some time, and to whose future determinations Gregory had already referred, when it was attempted to impose the bishopric upon him by force. It was quite consistent with the whole previous proceedings of the emperor, that he should invite particularly those bishops from whom he could expect an agreement with the Nicene confession of faith.<sup>2</sup> According to this regulation, they are reckoned (as it is well known) 150 in number, and, on that account, the assembly is also called plainly, ‘The Synod of the 150 Bishops.’ Those of the greatest weight amongst them are, Meletius of Antioch, Helladius of Cæsarea, Gregory of Nyssa, Amphilochius of Iconium, Diodorus of Tarsus, and Cyrill of Jerusalem. Other parties, however, besides the decidedly orthodox, were not entirely excluded from the assembly; for Theodosius had expressly invited the *Macedonians* with the hope of an union; and there appeared no less than thirty-six of their bishops, principally from the neighbourhood of the Hellespont. The most distinguished among them were Eleusius of Cyzicus, and Marcianus of Lampsacus. The emperor and the other bishops made every effort to induce them to receive the Nicene confession of faith; but they declared firmly against it, left Constantinople,

---

<sup>1</sup> Socrat., v. 8; Sozom., vii. 7; Theodoret., v. 7, 8; Mansi's *Collect. Conciliorum*, t. iii. p. 523 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Socrates says thus: ὁ βασιλεὺς σύνοδον ἐπισκόπων τῆς αὐτοῦ πίστεως συγκαλεῖ, ἐπὶ τὸ κρατύναι τὴν ἐν Νικαίᾳ πίστιν, καὶ χειροτονῆσαι τῇ Κωνσταντίνου πόλει ἐπισκοπον.



and exhorted their respective communities, by letters, not to unite themselves with the professors of the Nicene doctrine.<sup>1</sup> No mention has been handed down to us of the presence of a single Western bishop in this assembly; nay, it is certain that Theodosius had called together this synod without consulting the Roman bishop, Damasus,<sup>2</sup> and that no persons took part in the proceedings as his representatives. It must have displeased Damasus still more that a person, whom he, with all the Western and Egyptian bishops, had not recognised as in legitimate possession of the episcopal dignity, there exercised the most decided influence, and, at first, even enjoyed the precedence in the assembly of bishops. *Meletius*, the venerable bishop of Antioch, an aged man, universally honoured for his mildness and piety, certainly *at first* presided at this meeting of ecclesiastics; but *subsequently* (as it is highly probable) Gregory of Nazianzum himself. The aged Meletius is described by Gregory (who had a particular affection for him) as a genuine angel of peace, simple, of an unsophisticated nature, full of heavenly sentiments, which beamed from his tranquil eye, but, at the same time, courageous and decided.<sup>3</sup> He was, therefore, excellently qualified for acting as president of such an

---

<sup>1</sup> Socrat., v. 8. Sozom., vii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> No one has shown this more clearly and fully than the celebrated French scholar Edmund Richer, in his excellent *Historia Conciliorum Generalium*, lib. i. cap. 5, pp. 169—197. Edit. Colon.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1514, p. 24.

Ὦν ἦν ἀνὴρ πρόεδρος εὐσεβέστατος,

Ἀπλοῦς, ἀτεχνος τὸν τρόπον, Θεοῦ γέμων,

Βλέπων γαλήνην, θάρσος αἰδοῦ σύγκρατον.

He was also held in high respect by Theodosius: see Theodoret. *Hist. Ecc.*, v. 7.

assembly, and it is only to be lamented that he could not animate it with his own spirit. Besides him, Nectarius is also named (in the Acts of the council of Chalcedon) as presiding at the synod of Constantinople, which can only mean, that he exercised that office as the newly-elected bishop of Constantinople, after the voluntary retirement of Gregory.<sup>1</sup>

Meletius appears to have arrived at Constantinople earlier than the other bishops.<sup>2</sup> After as many ecclesiastics had assembled as seemed necessary for the opening of the council, they<sup>3</sup> proceeded (after a suitable address of greeting to the emperor) to the consideration and settlement of the questions relative to the Church of Constantinople, although the bishops of Egypt and Macedonia had not yet appeared.<sup>4</sup> The recent election of Maximus to the bishopric of Constantinople was

---

<sup>1</sup> Meletius is especially described by Gregory as *πρόεδρος*. After the death of Meletius, it is highly probable that Gregory himself, for a short time, undertook the presidentship, and, on his resignation, Nectarius, his successor. Sozomenus (vii. 7) certainly seems to speak of Timotheus of Alexandria, Meletius, and Cyrill of Jerusalem, as presidents at this synod. But his expressions are too undecided to enable us to draw a positive conclusion from them.

<sup>2</sup> Socrat., v. 8: *Μελέτιος δὲ ἐξ Ἀντιοχείας πάλαι παρῆν, ὅτε διὰ τὴν Γρηγορίου κατάστασιν μετεστάλη.*

<sup>3</sup> The beginning of the synod, according to Socrates, fell in the month of May: *συνήλθον ἐν ὑπατείᾳ (in the consulship) Εὐχαρίου καὶ Ἐυαγρίου, τῷ μαΐῳ μηνί.*

<sup>4</sup> Socrates, in the place above quoted, says plainly, that Meletius was there earlier than the rest for the purpose of instituting Gregory in the bishopric of Constantinople. Theodoret (v. 7) represents him as making his first appearance before Theodosius with the other bishops. This agrees with the hypothesis that Meletius, with a part of the bishops who were invited to the synod, was earlier in Constantinople, whilst the Egyptian and Macedonian bishops (whom Gregory also represents as arriving later) were not yet present. Comp. Gregor. *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1798, p. 28. That among the names of bishops subscribed

examined into, and, after due inquiry, set aside by the bishops. There occurs a special law on this subject, in the orders of the synod, to this effect:<sup>1</sup> 'In regard to Maximus the cynic, and the disturbance which took place on his account at Constantinople, neither with respect to the past nor to the present time is the said Maximus to be looked upon as a bishop; and the same holds good of all persons who may have been ordained by him to any spiritual office, whatsoever that office may be. Everything, generally, which has been undertaken with him and from him is here declared to be invalid.'

This canon was directed, as we see, not only against Maximus, but also against the Egyptian bishops who had consecrated him at Constantinople, and against the subordinate ecclesiastics whom he probably afterwards ordained in Egypt. It is highly probable that a partisan, like Maximus, had still his adherents among the Egyptian clergy, and that the Fathers, assembled at Constantinople, cherished a reasonable distrust towards their Egyptian brethren. This confirms the conclusion, that the assembled prelates purposely settled this business before the Egyptian bishops arrived, or else that their summons to the synod was so arranged, that they could not come in time for the commencement of its proceedings. The assembled bishops had also, without doubt, passed before the arrival of the Egyptians a decree, which referred to the meddling of the Alexandrian bishop and his clergy in the concerns of the see of Constantinople, and was also intended to forbid any-

---

to the decrees of the council no Macedonian occurs, need occasion us no difficulty, since Gregory's account of the synod is much more to be depended upon than these signatures.

<sup>1</sup> See *Canon* iv. in *Mansi*, tom iii. p. 559.

thing of the like kind for the future; for they determined,<sup>1</sup>—‘that all bishops should remain in their own dioceses, and not intrude upon another’s province; and that they should not, uncalled, mix themselves up with ordinations in which they have no concern.’

When now the concerns of the Church in Constantinople were supposed to be securely arranged, it became necessary to proceed to the actual and legal election of a bishop for the chief city. And whom else could that election fix upon than Gregory? He, the courageous defender of the Nicene faith, beloved by the emperor, adored by the people, respected and feared by most of the clergy, was now actually elected by the synod as bishop<sup>2</sup> of the Eastern capital. This, indeed, was the only admissible mode of election, because he was not yet released from his bishopric of Nazianzum or Sasima.<sup>3</sup> Gregory declares that even now the acceptance of this dignity was unpleasant to him, but

<sup>1</sup> *Canon ii.*, see Mansi, p. 559. That this decree had a polemic reference to the Bishop of Alexandria is clear from hence, that he is the only prelate expressly named, and to whom it is directly prescribed ‘that he should interfere in the regulation of church matters only in Egypt.’

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1525, p. 24 :

Οὗτοι μ’ ἐνιδρύουσι τοῖς σεμνοῖς θρόνοις  
Βοῶντα καὶ στένοντα.

<sup>3</sup> Certainly the 15th canon of the Nicene Council was opposed to the legality of Gregory’s elevation to the bishopric of Constantinople, which forbade bishops to leave their posts and enter upon another bishopric. Nor was it omitted to give weight to this fact against him. To this, Meletius (who was favourable to Gregory, and consecrated him as Bishop of Constantinople) replied—that the law was made only to prevent ambitious views; but as these could not exist in this instance, it was not applicable to the case in question. (Theodoret, v. 8 : τοῦτον (Γρηγόριον) ἰδὼν ὁ θεῖος Μελέτιος, καὶ τῶν τὸν κανόνα γεγραφότων τὸν σκοπὸν ἐπιστάμενος—τάς γὰρ τῆς φιλαρχίας ἀφορμὰς περικόπ-



that this unpleasantness was sweetened to him by the hope of being able, as legitimate bishop of Constantinople, to contribute much to the reconciliation of those disputes, which, originating with the Meletian schism in Antioch, separated and distracted the Eastern and Western Churches.<sup>1</sup> The consecration of Gregory was conducted with much solemnity by all the bishops then present, with Meletius at their head, and honoured with appropriate discourses.

This commencement was probably the calmest and brightest period of the synod; the old contention about the bishopric of Antioch was soon renewed, and, indeed, in a manner that was extremely unworthy of an assembly of ecclesiastics. The venerable old man Meletius died, and in him disappeared the angel of peace.<sup>2</sup> After his

---

τοντες, ἐκώλυσαν τὴν μετάθεσιν — ἐβεβαίωσε τῷ Θεοτάτῳ Γρηγορίῳ τὴν τῆς Κωνσταντινουπόλεως προεδρίαν.) Such a subjective exposition of the law, according to its spirit and object, might undoubtedly lead to most arbitrary judgment; only the declaration of a general synod could legally make any alteration on this point. It might with more justice have been argued in favour of Gregory, that at Nazianzum he had only been his father's coadjutor, and that as to the bishopric of Sasima, he had been forced into it against his will, and, indeed, had never exercised any episcopal offices there.

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1529 et seq. p. 24. He remarks, however, that there may have been ματαίας καρδίας φαντάσματα.

<sup>2</sup> Greg. *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1573, p. 25. How widely different from the peace-loving Meletius was the conduct of the other bishops, appears, e.g., from the following sketch—*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1550, p. 25:

Θρόνων ἐπ' ἄκρων ἐξερέυγεται λόγος,  
Οἱ πᾶσι κηρύσσοντες εἰρήνην ἀεὶ,  
Φωναῖς πλατείαις ἐν μέσαις ἐκκλησίαις,  
Τοσοῦτον ἐμμανησαν ἀλλήλοις πικρῶς,  
Ὡστ' ἐκβοῶντες, συλλέγοντες συμμάχους,  
Κατηγοροῦντες καὶ κατηγορούμενοι,  
Πηδῶντες, ἐκδημοῦντες ἐν πηδῆμασι,  
Διαρπάζοντες ὅς τ' εὖ τύχοι τις προφθάσας.

funeral had been celebrated with great splendour,<sup>1</sup> a contest arose about what he had left behind him,—viz. the bishopric of Antioch, which his death had vacated. This might have been the moment for uniting the so long separated parties in Antioch, had the oversight of the whole Antiochian community been transferred to the still surviving Paulinus. We are even told by ancient writers, that there existed an agreement between the clergy and the laity of Antioch, by virtue of which, after the decease of Meletius or of Paulinus, he who survived the other should be recognised as the sole bishop; nay, that this agreement had even been sworn to by a number of the clergy on both sides.<sup>2</sup> Without doubt, such an arrangement would gradually, and in the safest manner, have produced peace. Gregory also looked upon the general acknowledgment of Paulinus as the most judicious measure for the attainment of union, and justified this view with thorough earnestness and warmth before the assembly. What he said on that occasion was essentially as follows:<sup>3</sup>—‘We ought now to take a higher view of the question, and not

---

<sup>1</sup> The funeral obsequies of Meletius were honoured with many eulogistic orations (Theodoret, v. 8), among which Socrates (*Hist. Eccles.*, v. 9) especially distinguishes that of Gregory of Nyssa. After this solemnity had been celebrated in Constantinople with especial honour, his body was carried to Antioch, and buried there.—(Greg. *Carm. de Vita sua*, line 1579 et seq. p. 25). Meletius, especially towards the end of his life, enjoyed uncommon respect; and if at the beginning of his career his convictions were wavering, and his orthodoxy somewhat suspicious, yet his character unfolded itself so beautifully amongst various visitations and sufferings—he showed himself so amiable, mild, and pious, that he acquired such a degree of general affection as scarcely any other ecclesiastic of that stormy period did.

<sup>2</sup> Socrat., v. 5; Sozom., vii. 3; and, with some variation, Theodoret., vii. 2 et seq.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, lines 1590—1680, pp. 25, 26, 27.

allow ourselves to be mixed up with the party feelings of a particular city. Were those individuals even angels, yet they deserved not that, for their sakes, Christendom, redeemed so dearly, and called to peace, should be involved in a general contest. But since the dispute is already kindled, it is now that it can again be best suppressed. Let him who is now in possession of the episcopal seat still retain it. Meanwhile, he also is growing old, and the common lot of mortals must befall him! *Then* a new bishop can be elected with the general consent of the laity and the clergy, and with the advice of the most judicious bishops. This is the only way to peace, which, after weighing well how destructive this contentious spirit is to the Church, we ought to adopt from a holy sense of duty. But that you may be convinced that no regard to self-interest, no desire to please man, has moved me to give this council, *I now request permission to resign my bishopric, and to lead, if a more inglorious, yet a more peaceful life!*

In this clear and manly language spoke Gregory. But the spirit of party was too strong for the voice of reason to be heard. The assembled bishops were almost all supporters of Meletius (Paulinus had not even been invited to the synod), and might feel assured that the implacable jealousy of the Meletian party at Antioch would never recognise Paulinus as bishop.<sup>1</sup> Supported, therefore, by that party-spirit at Antioch, the same spirit made its voice heard even here, in the assembly of bishops. Scarcely had Gregory finished his address,

---

<sup>1</sup> Socrat., v. 9: οἱ Μελετίῳ προσκείμενοι ὑπὸ Παυλῖνον εἶναι οὐκ ᾔθελον. It was a stubborn party-spirit which thus attached itself to persons.

when, particularly, the younger ecclesiastics (whom he certainly had not flattered) rose up in opposition to the views proposed by him, screaming tumultuously (to use Gregory's own expression), like *jackdaws*, and falling upon him like a swarm of *wasps*.<sup>1</sup> These brawlers succeeded in carrying with them even the temperate and the old, and thus the calm words of wisdom were perfectly inoperative. The actual result (probably at the instigation of the Syrian prelates, who did not wish to be subject to Paulinus) was, that a successor was given to Meletius, and a rival bishop to Paulinus, in the person of Flexianus the presbyter. (Socrat., v. 9; Sozom., vii. 11.) With this choice the Meletian community of Antioch completely coincided.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### GREGORY RESIGNS, AND LEAVES HIS CONGREGATION.

MEANWHILE the sittings of the synod continued in so stormy a manner as could not be pleasing to an earnest-minded man. Gregory was glad to be prevented by illness for several days from attending the meetings,<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1680. Compare *Carm. x.* line 92, p. 81, where, among other things, he compares even the bishops with *cranes* and *geese*. Certainly, only those who are admirers of the unlimited authority of councils should read Gregory's description of this Œcumenic synod; and especially his delineation of most of its members. See *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 154, p. 18 et seq., where, among other things, he represents it as something discreditable to sit in the midst of such *traders-in-faith*:

καὶ γὰρ ἦν αἷσχος μέγα  
Τούτων τιν' εἶναι τῶν καπήλων πίστεως.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1745, p. 28.



and at last, when he saw that his voice could not make its way there, he firmly determined to withdraw himself altogether. With this view he quitted his recent episcopal residence, and no longer assisted at the synod.<sup>1</sup> This step made a great impression upon the people, who earnestly besought Gregory to devote the rest of his life entirely to them and to God, whose Gospel he had hitherto preached with such power among them.<sup>2</sup>

Gregory was not yet able to come to a positive determination of resigning his bishopric, when the proceedings of the synod, through the arrival of the hitherto absent bishops of Egypt and Macedonia, took a turn which brought this determination to maturity.<sup>3</sup> These bishops, who naturally felt themselves neglected in the tardiness of their summons, were already, even on that ground, inclined to set themselves against that which the synod had already determined upon. They showed themselves particularly dissatisfied with the election of Gregory; and this, as he himself says, not so much out of hatred towards him, or preference for another, whom they would rather have placed on the episcopal seat, but rather from a refractory spirit against

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1778, p. 28.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1781 et seq. p. 28.

<sup>3</sup> That the Egyptian and Macedonian bishops did arrive late, is clear from the whole account of the matter by Gregory. After relating all that has been given above, he thus proceeds (*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1798, p. 28) to report the arrival of these bishops, as something that had newly occurred :

Ἦλθον γάρ, ἦλθον ἐξαπίνης κεκλημένοι  
Αἰγύπτιοι τε καὶ Μακεδόνες ἐργάται  
Τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ νόμων τε καὶ μυστηρίων,  
Φυσῶντες ἡμῖν ἐσπερίον τε καὶ τραχύ.  
Τοῖς δ' ἀντεπῆει δῆμος ἡλιοφρόνων.

those who had elected Gregory.<sup>1</sup> So, at least, they secretly represented the matter to him.

According to all probability, this refers more particularly to the fact, that Gregory had been elected under the influence of Meletius, and consecrated by him. But, publicly, they made use of another reason for rejecting Gregory; for instance, they applied to this case the 15th canon of the Nicene council: ‘that, to guard against irregularities, no bishop, presbyter, or deacon, should pass from one city to another. But should any one presume to act on this plan, the arrangement should go for nothing, and the ecclesiastic should be sent back to the church in which he had been first ordained.’ According to this, they now maintained that Gregory could legitimately be only bishop of Sasima, but by no means bishop of Constantinople. Gregory and his defenders, on the contrary, appealed to the fact that he had, by the declaration of a general synod, been released altogether from this already antiquated law;<sup>2</sup> an argument which, however, was not raised above all doubts.

Gregory now considered himself so seriously ill, that, setting aside all other considerations, he formed a deter-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1812, p. 29 :

Οὐ μὲν πρὸς ἔχθραν τήν ἐμήν, οὐδὲ θρόνον  
 Σπείδοντες ἄλλοις, οὐδαμῶς, ὅσον πόνον  
 Τῶν ἐνθρονιστῶν τῶν ἐμῶν, ὥς γοῦν ἐμὲ  
 Σαφῶς ἔπειθον λαθρίοις δηλώμασι.

<sup>2</sup> Gregory designates this Nicene canon as *an antiquated law*.  
*Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1810, p. 29 :

Νόμους στρέφοντες τοὺς πάλαι τεθνηκότας,  
 Ὃν πλεῖστον ἡμεν καὶ σαφῶς ἐλεύθεροι.

But we cannot quite see what sufficient ground he had for saying so. The 15th canon had been annulled by no succeeding council ;

mined resolution to resign his office. He presented himself before the assembled bishops, and addressed them as follows:<sup>1</sup>—‘Whatever this assembly may afterwards determine concerning me, I would gladly raise your thoughts beforehand to a subject of far higher importance. I pray you, then, be at harmony with each other, and united in love! Shall we always be derided as irreconcilable, and be animated only by one thing,—viz. contention? Offer the hand of brotherly affection. But I will be another Jonas. I will sacrifice myself for the safety of our ship (the Church), although I am guiltless as to the storm that has been raised. Let the lot fall upon me, and throw me into the sea; a hospitable whale will receive me in the deep waters. Let this be the beginning of your reconciliation. Unwillingly I ascended the episcopal throne, and willingly I again descend from it. My poor weak body also counsels me to this. Only one debt have I still to pay—the debt of death; and that is God’s concern. But O my beloved Trinity in Unity! only on thy account am I sorrowful. Wilt thou indeed have an honest man as my successor, who may defend thee with courage and a zealous devotedness? But fare ye well! and think, I pray you, of my labours and troubles.’ Thus spoke Gregory.

---

nay, rather, towards the end of the fourth century, it was quite as beneficial and necessary as it had been at the beginning of the same. And Gregory himself, so great an admirer in general of the decrees of Nicæa, was least justified in speaking of one of them as *antiquated*. Only by the decree of a general synod could he be released therefrom, and this he actually had been when the synod of Constantinople appointed him bishop of that capital. The correctness, however, of that decision was called in question by the Egyptian and Macedonian bishops, because they had not been present at the passing of the same.

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. sua*, line 1828, p. 29.

The bishops, taken by surprise, hesitated, in doubt how they should declare themselves. Gregory left the assembly with mingled sensations, *happy* at the thought that he should now enjoy repose, but *sad* when he thought of his flock, and their feelings on becoming acquainted with what had happened.<sup>1</sup> No sooner, however, had Gregory left the assembly, than the bishops showed their satisfaction at his resignation;<sup>2</sup> a thing at which we might be inclined to wonder, if we did not take into consideration the ordinary course of human proceedings. The greater part of the clergy were heartily glad to be quit of a man whom they envied, who was superior to them in genius and eloquence, who often severely censured their violent conduct, and did not always deliver his wiser counsel with perfect mildness. And, besides this, the Macedonian and Egyptian prelates already formed a decided opposition, which was maintained by them the more firmly, because it sprung (especially in the case of the Egyptians) from the long-standing party spirit of their entire Church.

Gregory went straightway to the emperor, and, in the presence of many persons, requested his dismissal in a straightforward, dignified manner:<sup>3</sup> ‘I desire not gold of thee, magnanimous prince, nor valuable ornaments

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1856 et seq. p. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1869, and especially *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 145, p. 18 :

Προὔπεμψαν ἔνθεν ἀσμένως οἱ φίλτατοι  
 “Ὡσπερ τιν’ ὄγκον ἐκ νεῶς βαρουμένης  
 ‘Ρίψαντες’ ἦν γὰρ φόρτος εὐφρονῶν κακοῖς.

Even the false report was circulated, that the bishops had deposed Gregory against his wishes. *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1929, and *Carmen* ii. line 11, p. 75, in Tollius.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, lines 1871—1905, pp. 29, 30.



for my church, nor honourable appointments for my relations. I believe that I have deserved of thee a far higher act of grace. Permit me, then, to withdraw myself out of the reach of envy.’<sup>1</sup> With such words Gregory approached the emperor, at the same time adjuring him to make every effort to restore peace among the excited bishops. Theodosius, though he viewed with the deepest regret his departure from Constantinople, solemnly promised the venerable bishop the strictest attention to his request.

Gregory now received so many proofs of the sympathy of his congregation, that he could not well avoid the public expression of a solemn farewell; it was also obligatory upon him openly to state his exact position, and to justify his proceedings. This he did in his famous *Valedictory Oration*,<sup>2</sup> from which we the more willingly extract some striking passages, as it belongs to the most distinguished oratorical productions of Gregory. In the first place, Gregory addresses the assembled bishops in a conciliatory manner, and engages to give them an account of his previous official conduct. He describes the melancholy state of the orthodox community in Constantinople immediately before his arrival, under the government of Valens;<sup>3</sup> how it scarcely presented the appearance of a community, being small, without a pastor, scattered, persecuted, unprotected by law, and robbed of all property. He then points to its im-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm. de Vit. s.*, line 1889, p. 30 :

“Εν μοι δοξῆτο, μικρὸν εἶξαι τῷ φθόνῳ.

Θρόνους ποθεῶμεν ἀλλὰ πόρρωθεν σέβειν.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xlii. pp. 748—768. The title of the oration is: Συν-  
ακτῆριος εἰς τὴν τῶν ρν (i.e. 150) ἐπισκόπων παρουσίαν.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 2, p. 749.

proved condition at the time of his address: 'Lift up thine eyes (he says) and look around,<sup>1</sup> thou who wouldst test my teaching here. Observe this glorious wreath that has already been woven; see the assembly of presbyters, venerable for their age and intelligence, the modest deacons, the excellent readers, the inquiring, docile people, the men and women, alike respected for their virtue. This goodly wreath (I say it not from the Lord, but still I say it), this wreath have I in a great measure helped to construct; this crown is, at least in part, the result of my preaching.' Gregory was undoubtedly too modest to ascribe only to his own exertions the great alteration which, under favourable external circumstances, had been brought about in so short a time. He saw therein a divine providence.<sup>2</sup> But yet, in the position in which he had been placed, he had also a perfect right to claim value for his personal co-operation, that had been so unthankfully received, and especially to exhibit forcibly the grave importance of the effort to maintain and establish the pure doctrine at that particular time in Constantinople. 'For if this be not a great thing (he says, in reference thereto),<sup>3</sup> to have fortified and established in sound doctrine the city, which is the eye of the world, the mistress of sea and land, the connecting link between East and West, to which everything flows in from all quarters,<sup>4</sup> and from

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 11, p. 755 et seq. Compare *Carm. advers. Episc.*, line 115 et seq. p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Carm.* ii. line 61, p. 80, in Tollius:

'Ἄλλ' οὐκ ἐμὸν γε, πλὴν ὅσ' ἔχρησε Θεός.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 10, p. 755.

<sup>4</sup> Certainly it might also be said of this new Rome, what Tacitus (*Annal.* xv. 44) says of the old: quo cuncta undique atrocia aut pudenda confluunt celebranturque.

which everything issues, as from a common emporium of the faith—and all this at a time when it was disturbed on all sides by most opposite opinions—if this be not a great thing, scarcely could anything else appear great and worth an effort. But granting this to belong to praiseworthy things, then may I feel a little pride therein—then have I contributed in part to the production of that which you now see around you.’ Gregory might with a good conscience appeal to his ministerial labours. It had been his steady aim to act therein in reference to the good cause, and to the advantage of the community entrusted to his care, not for the attainment of selfish objects of gratification or advancement. ‘Have I ever<sup>1</sup> (he could safely presume to say)—have I ever taken advantage of this people through love of gain? Have I been anxious to promote my own interest, as most people do? Have I ever grieved the Church? *Others probably I may have grieved* (against whom, because they fancied we might have surrendered our good cause, my preaching was directed), but not *you*, as far as I am conscious to myself. I have kept my priestly-vows pure and without falsehood. If I have done homage to power, or striven for dominion, or obtruded myself into the palaces of princes, then will no honour attend my name; or if I have gained any, I shall instantly lose it.’

Gregory then, after giving a full statement of the doctrine of the Trinity (by the force of which he was convinced he had wrought all this, the Holy Spirit working with him), presents to the assembled bishops his flourishing congregation, as at the same time his

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 19, p. 761.

best defence and fairest gift, and asks of them in return his discharge from his post. (*Orat.* xlii. 20. p. 761). ‘Grant me now also a reward for my past exertions. And what is it I ask? Not that which suspicious minds might suppose; but such as I can with security demand. Give me rest from my protracted labours. Respect this hoary head; respect the claims of hospitality. Choose in my place some other man, like me, subject to persecution; a man of clean hands, and judicious in his discourses, who is qualified to live in all things agreeably to your wishes, and able to bear up under ecclesiastical cares; for this is a necessary qualification in our days. Ye see how my body is wasted by age and sickness and over-exertion; what farther use could ye find in a sickly, debilitated old man? in one who, so to say, dieth daily, not only from bodily weakness, but from care and sorrows?’

Gregory next laments bitterly the contentious disposition that prevailed among the bishops, and the general party-spirit arising therefrom: ‘How,’ he asks, ‘could I support this *holy* war? for we may speak of a holy war as we do of a barbarous war. How should I endure those persons who, in the very discharge of their office, oppose one another, make their ministerial duties an occasion of dispute, and assemble together, not an united people, but a people split and divided by *their* separations, and, like their teachers, hostile to each other? nay, not only their own people are thus affected, but parties are formed through the whole world, in agreement with the views of those restless individuals; so that now the East and the West are divided into two hostile parties, and seem no less separated by their opinions than they are by their natural boundaries.



How long (the orator proceeds, in allusion to the Meletian schism)—how long shall we speak of my teacher and thy teacher, of the old school and the new, of the more eloquent or the more spiritual, of the more noble or the less noble, of him who has the larger or the smaller congregation? I should disgrace my old age, if I, *who have my salvation through Christ*, should suffer myself to be called after another (*i. e.*, adopt any party name).<sup>1</sup>

In continuing the discourse, Gregory defends himself against some unjust reproaches which were frequently made against him, particularly against the absurd charge of not having lived in the same expensive style as other wordly-minded prelates of that time indulged in. He considers himself rather entitled to censure the inhabitants of Constantinople for looking too much to externals in their clergy: ‘For (he says) they require not *priests* but *orators*,<sup>2</sup> not curators of souls, but possessors of riches; not pure ministers of the altar, but powerful combatants.’

The orator then goes on to the conclusion, in which he once more brings together all his sentiments, and which, on that account, may here be introduced entire.<sup>3</sup> ‘Now farewell, my beloved church, Anastasia, thou who bearest so blessed a name! Thou raisedst up again our

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carm.* xi. line 155 :

——Χριστὸς δὲ μάτην ἥλοισι πέπαρται.

Οὐ γὰρ ἀπὸ Χριστοῦ καλούμεθα, ἐκ μερόπων δέ.

The word μέροψ, in the *Lexicons*, is rendered ‘avis quædam,’ a voice-dividing bird—probably a magpie; but here, surely, it is enough to apply it (with Homer) to *men*, as opposed to *Christ*.—*Translator*.

<sup>2</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 24, p. 765.

<sup>3</sup> *Orat.* xlii. 26, pp. 766—768.

true faith, which at that time was still despised; thou field of our common victory, thou new Shiloh, where we first set up again the Ark of the Covenant, after it had been carried about during forty years' wandering in the wilderness! And thou, too, larger and more celebrated temple, our new possession, who hast now first received thy true greatness from the true preaching of the everlasting word of God! And all ye houses of God, which come near to it in beauty, and, distributed in different quarters of the city, connect the neighbourly relation by a holy chain—ye folds, which not we in our weakness, but God by his grace working with us, hath filled with sheep that had else been lost! Farewell, ye apostles, who deign to inhabit this temple;<sup>1</sup> ye types of my struggle!—Farewell thou, my episcopal throne, envied but dangerous seat! and thou assemblage of higher priests, and ye other priests, venerable by your age and humble bearing! and whosoever else serveth at the holy table of God, and standeth near to the ever-near God! Farewell, ye choruses of the Nazareans, ye harmonies of psalms and hymns, ye nightly prayers, ye chaste virgins, ye modest wives and widows, ye assembled orphans, ye poor, whose eyes looked up to God and me! Farewell, ye hospitable and Christ-loving houses, which have taken a kind interest in my weakness! Farewell, ye friendly listeners to my discourses, ye who have attended on them in crowds, and have even taken them down in writing, openly or secretly! Thou, too,

---

<sup>1</sup> It was believed that the church of the Apostles contained the remains of St. Andrew, St. Luke, and Timothy. See Idacii, *Chron. ad Consul. Const. viii. et Julian. i.*; and the same writer, *ad Consul. Const. ix. et Jul. ii.* See also more particulars in Du Cange, *Constantinop. Christ.*, iv. 5, p. 105.

my pulpit, so often closely pressed upon by my eager audience, farewell! Farewell ye princes, and ye palaces, and all ye that form the establishment and household of the emperor. Whether ye are loyal to the emperor or not, I do not know; but to God ye are in a great measure untrue. Clap your hands, raise the shout of approbation, extol your preacher to the skies!\* The tongue that has been so troublesome to you will speak to you no more; but it is not entirely speechless; it will still fight the good fight through the hand and the pen; it is only for the present that it will be silent.

‘Farewell, thou vast, Christ-loving city! for I will bear witness to this truth, even though thy zeal is not always combined with knowledge; approaching separation makes me judge mildly of thee. Keep close to the truth; change at length for the better; honour God more than you have hitherto done; such a change brings no shame with it, but perseverance in evil will bring destruction. Farewell, Eastern and Western lands, those for which and those by which I am persecuted and opposed! He is my witness, who will establish peace among you, if only some few persons would imitate my act of resignation; for surely they who descend from the episcopal chair, do not thereby lose their connexion with God, but rather receive a heavenly seat, far higher and safer than it. But above all I say: Fare-

---

\* I have, with reluctance, translated this (looking to the Greek as well as the German) *literally*, on the authority of Neander, who, in his *Church History* (vol. iii. p. 427), so applies the passage, and builds on it a charge against Gregory of *vanity*, and a compliance with the bad practice of seeking applause, *κρότος*, from his congregation. From the context, both before and after, I am rather inclined to take it ironically, in allusion to some favourite orator.—*Translator*.

well, ye angels, protectors of this church, my protectors both during my presence here and in my discharge from office! for in God's hand lie all our destinies. And farewell, O Holy Trinity, my sole thought, my only jewel! Mayest thou be preserved to these, my people, and mayest thou preserve them! For they are still my people, even when they are taken charge of by another. And O that I may hear that ye are ever exalted and distinguished for sound doctrine and holy living! My children, cherish the truth which I have committed to you, and remember my persecutions for its sake. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all! Amen.'

Gregory's resignation is one of the most important events in his life, and, in fact, closes his public career. This renunciation of the highest station in the Church, so perfectly suited to him, has not unfrequently been looked upon as one of the noblest acts and as the brightest point in his life; for instance, by Sozomenus (*Eccles. Hist.*, vii. 7). Without denying the greatness of mind which really belonged to that voluntary determination, we yet think we ought not to assent to that unconditional praise; rather must we maintain that the motives of the proceeding, as far as we can discern them by means of safe historical traces, were of a mixed nature. Undoubtedly Gregory had been unjustly and vexatiously treated. He might with reason require an acknowledgment of his services in regard to the churches of the capital, and expect a due regard for his person; and both of these things he experienced at the commencement of the synod. But, in a short time, external circumstances and a low tone of sentiment turned from him the favourable bias of the excited ecclesiastics,



and changed it into a disrespectful resistance. Gregory upon that lost patience, and would have nothing more to do with the great body of them. Now was he not (if we may presume to ask the question) too much provoked, too deeply wounded, by this mere human occurrence? Might he not, with a higher discretion, courageously have endured all those personal attacks, and calmly maintained the post which belonged to him, in order to effect the more good after the storm was over?<sup>1</sup> We will not, however, be so unjust as to overlook the better motives which influenced him. Gregory really believed, that through his retiring the assembly would be more calm and peaceable (as it really then became), and so far his conduct was an act of self-denying, public-spirited sacrifice. In addition to this, he was old and sickly, and had well-established claims upon a quieter and more retired life, while a deep and inextinguishable longing ever attracted him to a life of solitary devoted-

---

<sup>1</sup> How excellently does the heroic, indefatigable champion of the faith, our German *Luther*, express himself in his exposition of the Sermon on the Mount! 'Whoever so preaches or rules, as to allow himself to become weary and impatient, and, as it were, to be driven into a corner, he will be slow in benefiting his people. It is not meant that you should sneak into a corner or into the wilderness, but rather to rush out if you were there, and devote yourself, hands and feet, nay, your whole body, and risk thereon all that you have, and all that you can do. We would have such a man as can be hard against the hard, so that he will not suffer himself to be frightened away nor clamoured down, nor allow any ingratitude or worldly malice to overcome him, but still press forward and persevere, as much as he can, by the exertion of all his energies. If he cannot make the world as religious as he could wish, let him do what he can.'—*Luther's Works*, vol. vii. p. 564; the Walch. edit. Certainly we ought not here to overlook this difference—that *Luther* was thoroughly of a *practical* spirit, whilst *Gregory's* turn of mind was, by nature, predominantly *contemplative*.

ness to God.<sup>1</sup> Gregory's resignation, therefore, proceeded quite naturally and necessarily from his intellectual constitution and his real character being placed in collision with those peculiar circumstances; and his better self (as well as the less worthy but strong sense of honour) appears to have contributed to this determination. Certainly, if we compare this act with the conduct of a great many other bishops, who thought no step too low in order to obtain an influential position, or to maintain themselves therein, it appears an heroic sacrifice, almost unique of its kind. For it was, undoubtedly, no small matter to relinquish a position won by so many labours, and earnestly desired, exactly at the moment when the fruits of those labours offered themselves for more peaceful enjoyment.

We cannot suppose that Gregory remained long in Constantinople after the delivery of his farewell oration. He had probably taken his departure ere the synod chose a successor to him, in the person of Nectarius, who had hitherto been a senator, and had been invested with the office of prætor.<sup>2</sup> This person is celebrated

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory expresses his feelings on the occasion of his resignation in, probably, his most beautiful poem—*Carm.* xii. p. 85.

<sup>2</sup> Socrat., v. 8.—*ἦν δέ τις Νεκτάριος ὄνομα, συγκλητικοῦ μὲν γένους* (of a senatorial family) *ἐπιεικῆς δὲ τὸν τρόπον, δι' ὅλου θανυμαζόμενος, καίτοι τὴν τοῦ πραιτωρός χειρίζων ἀρχήν· ὃς ἀρπασθεὶς ὑπὸ τοῦ λαοῦ, εἰς τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν προεβλήθη.* It is seen, however, in the more exact account by Sozomenus (vii. 8), that the election of Nectarius did not proceed from the people, but was chiefly the work of Diodorus of Tarsus (Nectarius himself also was a native of Tarsus) and of the Emperor Theodosius himself. The same writer also relates an interesting anecdote of Nectarius, from which it appears that his earlier life had not been altogether holy and bishop-like, but that he was, however, no hypocrite, but a truly noble, open-hearted, intelligent person. Sozom., vii. 10.

for his gentle and worthy character, but he had not qualified himself for a spiritual appointment. He had not even been as yet baptized. As a theologian, in the proper sense of the term, he was, therefore, by no means worthy of his distinguished predecessor; though it is not improbable that, by the mildness of his disposition, he exercised a more successful influence on the harmony of the assembled bishops than the strict Gregory had ever exercised.

It was probably in the month of June, A.D. 381, that Gregory left Constantinople, after he had laboured there between two and three years<sup>1</sup> with the authority of a bishop, and the superiority of a distinguished teacher, but only for a few weeks as actual bishop. It was after the voluntary retirement of Gregory, that the now quieter assembly of bishops adopted those important decisions which make that council an epoch in the history of the constitution and doctrines of the Church. In relation to the first (the constitution of the Church) the celebrated law was passed, which gives to the Bishop of Constantinople, as the bishop of new-Rome, the second rank; next, that is, to the Bishop of Rome. (See *Canon* iii.) But in relation to doctrine, not only was the Nicene confession confirmed, with additional condemnation of the heresies that were opposed to it,<sup>2</sup> but it was also completed by several

<sup>1</sup> He says himself (*Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 100):

τί σκαιὸν

ἂν εἶπον, ἢ ἔπραξα τοῦτ' ἔτος τρίτον;

whether the third year was completed there, admits of a doubt. At all events, his residence in Constantinople continued more than two years.

\* *Canon* i., where the Eunomians or Anomœans, the Arians or Eudoxians, Semi-Arians or Pneumatomachians, Sabellians, Marcellians, Photinians and Apollinarians, are expressly named.

additions,<sup>1</sup> the most important of which related to the Holy Ghost ; so that now the doctrine of the Trinity, in its fundamental principles, was ecclesiastically settled, invested with triumph by public authority of Church and State,<sup>2</sup> and therefore that result was attained for which Gregory had fought with the weapons of the Word.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The Nicene confession of faith, with these additions, is generally known under the title of *The Nicene-Constantinopolitan Symbol*. The other decrees of the council of Constantinople are not here of importance to us.

<sup>2</sup> The assembled bishops made their determinations known to the emperor in a written document, which bears the date of July 9, A.D. 381. The emperor, as might well be expected, (since the synod had proceeded quite according to his own views,) confirmed the resolutions, and also made several laws against the condemned heretics—Eunomians, Arians, and Aëlians. *Cod. Theod.* lib. xvi., T. V. L. 8. Then follow, lib. i., T. I. L. 3 (of the 30th of July); lib. xvi., T. V. L. 11, et seq. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Παροῦς βία, by the force of persuasion. *Carm. adv. Episc.*, line 120; *Carm.* i. p. 19.



## SECTION THE FOURTH.

---

FROM GREGORY'S DEPARTURE FROM CONSTANTINOPLE TO HIS NATIVE PROVINCE, DOWN TO THE TIME OF HIS DEATH. FROM THE YEAR OF OUR LORD 381 TO 390, AND THEREFORE FROM HIS FIFTY-FIRST TO HIS SIXTIETH YEAR.

**CHRONOLOGICAL REVIEW :—**Gregory left Constantinople and returned to Cappadocia most probably in June 381. He lived there for a short period in the discharge of public duties, but afterwards, for the most part, in undisturbed retirement. In the summer of 382 he was invited to a synod at Constantinople, which he however declined to attend. Probably in the year 383 he caused Eulalius to be chosen bishop of Nazianzum, and from that time withdrew himself entirely to his private estate. It is not easy to arrange chronologically a list of his labours and writings there. The death of Gregory took place A.D. 389 or 390.

---

### CHAPTER I.

GREGORY ENJOYS HIS RETIREMENT AND HIS RELEASE FROM SYNODS; HE IS, HOWEVER, CONSTANTLY ACTIVE IN THE SERVICE OF THE CHURCH AT NAZIANZUM.

GREGORY now withdrew from the dazzling arena of an absorbing activity to a quieter, though not altogether a secluded or inactive life. His soul longed after solitude and repose, but his ardent mind could not slumber in retirement.

He went first of all, as it seems, to Nazianzum, or to

his patrimonial estate near Arianzum, to give some refreshment to his infirm body and to his mind, that had suffered from the stormy contests he had been engaged in. A letter which he wrote to his friend Philagrius<sup>1</sup> gives us the best possible idea of the state of mind in which he then was; he therein first excuses himself for having been prevented by illness from visiting him, and then defends himself against the reproach (which his friend had brought against him) of having relinquished his post at Constantinople somewhat too hastily and inconsiderately.<sup>2</sup> ‘I am weary (he says) of the struggle with envy and with the *holy* bishops, who destroyed all chance of union on public-spirited grounds, and sacrificed *the cause of the faith to their private squabbles*. Therefore I have thought it right to turn the ship about, and (as is related of the nautili,<sup>3</sup> when they mark an approaching storm) withdraw into myself; so that I can now observe from my distant retreat, how others are knocked about and jostle with each other. Now when you write to me that it was a hazardous thing thus to leave the Church, I ask you, ‘What church?’ If it were my own, I should have agreed with her, and entirely justified her proceedings. But if it be

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 65, al. 59, p. 823.

<sup>2</sup> Παρέργως καὶ ῥαθύμως.

<sup>3</sup> Plinii *Histor. Natur.*, ix. 47. Inter præcipua miracula est, qui vocatur *Nautilus*, ab aliis *Pompilos*; supinus in summa æquorum pervenit, ita se paulatim subrigens, ut emissa omni per fistulam aqua, velut exoneratus sentina, facile naviget. Postea duo prima brachia retorquens, membranam inter illa miræ tenuitatis extendit; qua velificante in auras, cæteris subremigans brachiis, media cauda, uti gubernaculo, sese regit. Ita vadit alto, Liburnicarum gaudens imagine; et, *si quid pavoris interreniat, hausta se mergit aqua*. See some remarks on this in Har-doin's edition of Pliny, tom. i. pp. 516, 541.

one which does not properly concern me, and is not \* adjudged to me, then am I blameless. And if I have taken charge of it for a time, am I therefore irrevocably bound to it? If so, many others also would be equally bound, who have at any time taken the charge of churches that were not theirs. To maintain the contest is probably deserving of reward, but yet the act of withdrawing from it is not to be considered as a crime.'

Gregory had returned home with feelings of strong displeasure, and even of acrimony, at the conduct of the bishops towards him. He sought to relieve his full heart in the outpourings of epistolary correspondence; and we are indebted to this impulse of his sensibility for a poem seasoned with biting sarcasm (viz. *The Poem concerning the Bishops*<sup>1</sup>), in which he describes in the liveliest colours the corrupt state of the clergy of his time. The excited state of Gregory's feelings may have caused some exaggeration; but, as a whole, it contains such individualized touches of features taken from the life, that it bears upon it the complete impression of truth, and affords us the melancholy fact, that the ecclesiastical offices, and especially the bishoprics, of that time were filled in a great measure by persons who were not only very ignorant, but also in moral sentiment utterly unworthy of their appointment.<sup>2</sup> Another poem, con-

---

\* Does not all this apply to Nazianzum, rather than Constantinople?—*Translator*.

<sup>1</sup> This poem, εἰς αὐτὸν καὶ περὶ ἐπισκόπων, was first published in the *Insignibus Itinerarii Italici* of Jacobus Tollius; *Trajecti ad Rhēn.* MDCXCVI., and subsequently reprinted by Galland. We shall hereafter find occasion to quote some portions of it.

<sup>2</sup> Beausobre says:—Il faut, ou que cet évêque (Grégoire) ait été le plus médisant de tous les hommes, ou que le plupart de ceux de son temps fussent des gens vicieux et bien méprisables. Cependant ce n'étoient encore là, que des commencemens des douleurs. *Bibl. German.*, tom. xxxviii. p. 65.

*cerning his own Life*, was written by Gregory, in milder tone, though not unmixed with satire, which also seems to belong to this period, because it is continued exactly to his resignation of his office in Constantinople.

Gregory, however, could console himself in his life of retirement by the consciousness, that the good which he had done in Constantinople would follow him even in his solitude, and that he only left behind him in the unquiet capital struggle and suffering.<sup>1</sup> After he had gotten over the first sharp pain occasioned by his ungrateful treatment at Constantinople, Gregory soon felt himself well in body and cheerful in mind. In this tone of feeling he writes to his friend Amazonius:<sup>2</sup> ‘If any one of our common friends, (of whom I hope there are a good many,) should ask you, Where is Gregory now? and what is he doing? tell him only, in entire confidence of its truth, that he is enjoying, in perfect quiet, a philosophical life, and that he troubles himself as little about his enemies as he does about persons of whose existence he knows nothing. So little is his mind bowed down by recent events.’ Indeed he soon felt happy in his unenvied quiet, where, far away from the din of the world and the disputes of the clergy, he could occupy himself in prayer to God;<sup>3</sup> and he could, at last, even thank his enemies for having forced him into that solitary asylum. ‘I am leading<sup>4</sup> (he writes to a friend, Sophronius, an officer of state)—I am leading a philosophical life in undisturbed quiet. This have

---

<sup>1</sup> Compare, on this point, the 57th poem, p. 134, εἰς ἑαυτον μετὰ τὴν ἀπὸ τῆς Κωνσταντινου πόλεως ἐπάνοδον, in which, among other things, he says (line 3):—

“Ἐρχομ’ ἔχων ὅσ’ ἔρεξα, καὶ ὅσ’ ἐμόγησ’ ἀπολείψας.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 73, al. 70, p. 829.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 187, p. 887.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.* 59, al. 53, p. 816.



my enemies procured for me ; I could wish that they had even inflicted more of the like kind upon me, that I might recognise in them, even more than I do, my benefactors ! For so it often happens, that those plants which seem to take harm are exactly the first to bloom, while those which seem to be in the most flourishing condition suffer damage.'

That Gregory cherished no ill-will against his successor Nectarius, but rather a most friendly feeling, appears from several of his epistles.<sup>1</sup> We select, by way of proof, only one beautiful passage from a letter of introduction<sup>2</sup> which Gregory gave to a certain person named Paneratius, addressed to the Bishop of Constantinople : ' My affairs (he writes) go on quietly, just as it pleases them to go. I live now in peace, without contest or calls of business, and I value the security of undisturbed solitude as the highest reward that could be granted to me. Nay, I have even derived an additional advantage from this life of quiet, since by God's goodness I have completely recovered from my sickness. But as for you, as holy David says, ' Good luck have thou with thy honour ! ' and may the God, who has called you to the priestly dignity also attend you in the same, and guard you from all rude and insulting treatment ! ' Could Gregory express himself more mildly and affectionately to one who, without any great merit, now enjoyed the fruits of his strenuous labours in Constantinople ?

How entirely in earnest Gregory was in his declarations of satisfaction with his quiet position, and how

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 222, and 227, p. 913.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 51, al. 3, p. 812.

little he coveted the active occupation of ecclesiastical dignity, with all its weight and influence, is sufficiently proved by the expressions with which he declined repeated invitations to attend synods. When Theodosius (A.D. 382) caused him to be invited to a meeting of the bishops at Constantinople,<sup>1</sup> he thus answered Procopius,<sup>2</sup> who had communicated to him the wish of the emperor : *'I am, if the truth must be told, in such a tone of mind that I shun every assemblage of bishops, because I have never yet seen that any synod had a good ending, or that the evils complained of were removed by them, but were rather multiplied; since the spirit of dispute and the love of power (and do not think that I am here using too strong language) are exhibited there beyond all powers of description.* And any one who dares to speak against the baseness of others, would be more sure to bring down censure and complaints upon himself than succeed in subduing that baseness. For that reason I have retired into myself, and have found rest for my soul only in this withdrawal from the world. At present, however, I can also plead illness in justification of my resolve, since my end seems almost always at hand, and I am profitable for nothing. Therefore let your generosity pardon me; and I pray you also that you would reconcile the pious emperor to this refusal, so that he may not condemn me as remiss, but make allowance for my weakness, out of regard to which he has granted to my petition, instead of all other favours, the privilege

---

<sup>1</sup> In the summer of 382, a synod was again assembled at Constantinople, which, however, was neither so numerous attended, nor so important, as that which was held the year before. Theodoret., v. 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 55, al. 42, p. 814.

of retirement.' A most remarkable letter! which certainly inflicts a heavy blow upon the godly character and reputation of synods. Gregory knew the synods by experience; he was convinced that they only multiplied evils in the Church: how could he, therefore, recognise instruments of the Holy Ghost in those same individuals, whom he saw to be so entirely animated by a spirit of contention and ambition? And these thoughts he expressed, not only in an occasional mood of excitement and displeasure, but repeatedly,<sup>1</sup> and on different occasions. Among other passages, he writes thus to a friend<sup>2</sup> who had invited him to a meeting of bishops: 'I hasten to come to you, in order to talk with you *solus cum solo*; for as to the assemblies and synods, I keep myself at a distance from them, since I have found by experience, that *most* of them (that I may express myself in moderation) are not worth much.'

On his return to his native city, Gregory did not find the christian community there in quite a flourishing condition. We possess a poem by Gregory,<sup>3</sup> which contains a description of the christian community of Nazianzum after his father's death, and, from several expressions<sup>4</sup> in it, it might be fairly referred to this point of time. In this poem, the Apollinarians<sup>5</sup> are

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 76, p. 830.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 84, p. 42. We could, besides this, collate here several other epistles, in which Gregory calls upon distinguished persons, in secular authority, to exercise their influence, that at several synods to be holden at that time peace and order may be preserved among the bishops. *Epist.* 71 and 72, al. 68 and 69, pp. 827—829; *Epist.* 134 and 135, p. 863.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. εἰς αὐτόν, p. 243.

<sup>4</sup> Particularly line 35 et seq.

<sup>5</sup> They are called σαρκολάτραι (serving the flesh).—*Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. line 87.

especially designated as those who had brought the Church there into so sad a condition. Gregory, who must have felt this severely, exerted himself to give the community a director who would be able to oppose the prevailing evil. He thought to find such an one in a man, who certainly had hitherto filled a secular office in the finance-department,<sup>1</sup> but yet appeared to possess the proper qualifications, at least the right disposition, for the episcopal office. He saw himself, however, hindered in the execution of his plan by the presbyters<sup>2</sup> of Nazianzum, of whom he remarks, that some concealed a real aversion by a hypocritical show of friendship towards him, while others had exerted themselves in open hostility against him. He also complains that bishops, who had probably promised to support his plan, had on this occasion deceived him.<sup>3</sup> It appears that Gregory, after the failure of this attempt, gave the community another ruler, whose name, likewise, is unknown to us. He soon after withdrew to his patrimonial estate near Nazianzum.<sup>4</sup>

Scarcely, however, had Gregory been absent for a time from Nazianzum, when the necessity of possessing such a man as he was, was felt with renewed strength. The clergy and the people urged him to return into the city and oppose the Apollinarian heresy, that was spreading more and more around them. They would listen

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. line 61. Gregory says of him :

Καίπερ νεωστὶ χρημάτων  
Κράτος δεδεγμένον.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. line 66—86.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. line 115 :

Ἐκ μ' ἠπάτησαν οἱ σοφοὶ  
Λαῶν ἐπίσκοποι.

<sup>4</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. line 61. et seq. p. 74.



to none of Gregory's grounds of excuse—even distrusted his assurance that he was too old and infirm,<sup>1</sup> and actually gave him no peace until he once more formed the determination to undertake the superintendence of the Church of Nazianzum.<sup>2</sup> In that passage of the poem where he speaks of this determination, he expresses himself as if it were his purpose to devote the rest of his life entirely to spiritual duties in that community;<sup>3</sup> but he speaks, at the same time, in such strong terms of his bodily weakness, that it is to be presumed, from his very manner of expressing himself, that he could not long have supported the exertions connected, especially under such circumstances, with the episcopal office, but would soon again have required the enjoyment of repose and quiet. In fact, we see that, without relating any particular occasion for the change, Gregory again determines to withdraw himself from public life; and he could now do so (in spite of the real sympathy and affection which he still cherished for his native city) with so much the greater satisfaction, as a worthy successor now supplied his place. He had been successful in persuading the bishops of the neighbourhood to comply with his wishes, by electing the presbyter *Eulalius* bishop of Nazianzum;<sup>4</sup> a choice, concerning which Gregory thus expresses himself in an epistle to his relative, the Bishop of Nyssa:<sup>5</sup> 'I would most urgently request that no one

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen* v. line 72, p. 24 :

Πολλοὶ μὲν τρῦζεσκον ἐμοῖς παθέεσιν ἄπιστοι.

<sup>2</sup> *Carmen* v. line 84, et seq. p. 75.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen* v. line 83, et seq. p. 75; and at line 85 he says:

σοὶ (Χριστέ) παρέχω ζωῆς τόδε λείψανον.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.* 195. p. 803. *Epist.* 225, p. 912. Hieronym. *de Viris Illustr.*, cap. 117.

<sup>5</sup> *Epist.* 42, al. 36, p. 803: *Gregorio Nysseno*.

would circulate false reports concerning me or the bishops, as if they, in opposition to my wish, had named some other person to be my successor ; for I am by no means so despicable in their estimation, nor are they so spitefully disposed towards me. The truth is, that I have more than once prayed them, out of consideration to my half-dead body, and (because I feared the heavy responsibility of neglecting Christ's flock) I have besought it as a favour, that they would give the Church a shepherd—a thing which is not against the laws of the Church, and might ensure my recovery. Such a shepherd was then appointed, in the person of one who is fully worthy to be remembered by you in your prayers. I now also place him in your hands—the venerable Eulalius, the bishop beloved of God, and in whose arms I would wish to breathe my last ! But if any one thinks, that as long as a bishop is living no other should be chosen in his place, let him know that he thereby decides nothing against us, since everybody knows that I was not consecrated bishop of Nazianzum, but of Sasima,<sup>1</sup> although I undertook, for a short time, the super-

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregorius says very plainly : Πᾶσι γὰρ ὁῦλον, ὅτι μὴ Ναζιανζοῦ, Σασίμων δὲ προσβλήθημεν. He repeats this expression in another passage, *Epist.* ccxxv. p. 912, where, however, he asserts directly the contrary, while he says thus unambiguously : ἐγὼ γάρ, εἰ μὲν τοῦ σώματος οὕτως εἶχον ὥς ἐκκλησίας εὐνασθαι προσταττεῖν, Ναζιανζῷ, ἢ τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐπεκηρύχθην· ἀλλὰ μὴ Σασίμοις, ὥς τινες ἡμᾶς πείθουσιν, οὐκ ὀρθῶς. Both letters were written about the same time. Can the contradiction that exists in the passages above quoted be removed ? Scarcely so as to make it *altogether* disappear ; *in part*, however, after this fashion. Gregory was certainly consecrated bishop of Sasima by the then Cappadocian metropolitan, Basilus ; but this consecration, as being an act of spiritual violence, he had not fully acknowledged, and had never entered upon the duties of the office. As bishop of Nazianzum he never was properly conse-

intendence of the Nazianzen Church, as a guest rather than a bishop, out of respect to my father, and those who suppliantly entreated me to do so.'

---

## CHAPTER II.

GREGORY WITHDRAWS HIMSELF INTO PERFECT RETIREMENT, BUT STILL TAKES AN INTEREST IN CHURCH MATTERS, AND IN THE CONCERNS OF HIS FATHERLAND, OF PARTICULAR FAMILIES, AND INDIVIDUALS.

GREGORY now regularly devoted himself to the solitude of the country, and led, up to the time of his death, the externally uniform life of a christian ascetic in his patrimonial house at Arianzum, where a garden, with its shady trees and fountain, was his favourite resort. He however by no means gave himself up to an indolent repose; amidst strict religious exercises he was still earnestly active, and in many ways influential, even in worldly matters. This is proved by the vast number of epistles and poems which he wrote at this period, and which were, in part at least, intended to effect some good purpose in particular relations of life, whether far or near. It is hardly possible, and, if it were possible, it would excite very little interest, to particularize, in the exact order of time, all the little incidents which may have occurred in this epoch of Gregory's uniform existence.

---

crated, though he had in fact exercised the episcopal duties there. He was therefore in a certain sense bishop of Sasima and of Nazianzum, but he was so, in a certain sense, neither in one place nor in the other. This, however, certainly does not justify him in trifling or playing with these relations, and making a pretext, now of one and now of the other.

We will rather arrange them according to some leading points of view, and thus exhibit the subjects which particularly engaged his attention, as well as his tone of thought and activity of mind.

Although Gregory had wholly divested himself of ecclesiastical offices, properly so called, yet he did not cease to take a part in *the general concerns of the Church*. His efforts were particularly and constantly directed to the maintenance of peace and order. It was probably in the early part of his retired life, that for this object he wrote some letters to distinguished statesmen, whom he supposed likely to have a favourable influence on the minds of the bishops at an approaching synod. He was afraid that even in that assembly, the general good would be sacrificed to the spirit of contention and to private interest; he was willing, therefore, to make every effort to prevent that. With this feeling, he wrote thus to an influential person, named Posthumianus: <sup>1</sup> ‘Consider no object more noble than that under your authority, and by means thereof, peace may be maintained in the Church, even though it were necessary to proceed, for that object, with some severity against the noisy leaders of a party. If I seem in this to be somewhat premature, yet do not wonder that, although I have retired from actual business, I yet have not given up all anxiety for the common good; for though, according to the wish of those men, I relinquished the bishop’s chair and its proud dignity, I by no means gave up the practice of piety to them. So much the more, then, I think I may confidently reckon upon your compliance, inasmuch as I can have no eye to my own advantage, but solely to

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 71, al. 68, p. 827.



the common interests of the community.' Gregory wrote similar letters to other eminent individuals,<sup>1</sup> amongst others to the general, Modarius,<sup>2</sup> whether on the same or on some other occasion, it would be difficult to determine. If now this step of Gregory's be liable (as perhaps it may be) to be disapproved—viz., his calling upon secular placemen, and even a powerful general, to maintain order among the assembled bishops—we have only to reflect with what excited passions (a fact which Gregory had sufficient opportunities of knowing) a great portion of those ecclesiastics came to those meetings, and we shall, at least, not misapprehend his good purpose of promoting the best interests of the Church.

We have already remarked that, after his retiring from Constantinople, Gregory found the community of his native city disturbed, particularly by *Apollinarians*. These teachers maintained their ground perseveringly, made various attempts to establish themselves in the Church, or even to get the upper hand therein; and Gregory looked upon it as a duty, even in his solitary retirement, to contend against them. With this view, beside the poem already mentioned,<sup>3</sup> he wrote several epistles, the object of which was to thwart the influence of the Apollinarians. In a letter to Theodorus,<sup>4</sup> bishop of Tyana, after lamenting the melancholy state of the Nazianzen community, and his own infirmities, which prevented his personal exertions, he says: 'To pass over others, you will have heard from my honoured co-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 72, al. 69, p. 829. *Epist.* 134, p. 863.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 135, p. 863.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen Iambic.* xxiii. εἰς ἑαυτόν, p. 244 et seq.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.* 88, p. 843.

presbyters, the choir\*-bishop Eulalius and Celeusius, what the Apollinarians (who are forcing themselves upon us) have partly done already, and are partly threatening to do. I am now too old and feeble to prevent this, but you are intelligent and sufficiently strong; and, what is more, God has granted you power for the general superintendence of the Church.' Another epistle, addressed to the governor, Olympius,<sup>1</sup> furnishes us with still clearer information respecting these circumstances. Gregory therein tells him, that he had at first endeavoured to gain over the Apollinarians by kindness, and to dissuade them from their errors; but that they had only been made worse thereby, and more obdurate; and he believed that more serious measures must now be adopted towards them. 'For (he says) these pernicious men have presumed to recal, or at least (for I cannot positively say which) to make use of bishops, who have been deposed from their office by the whole assembled clergy of the East and West. In violation of all the imperial commands and our ecclesiastical regulations, they have assigned the name of bishop to a godless, fraudulent individual taken from their own body. And to this, as I believe, they have been encouraged by nothing so much as by my serious illness. Is this to be tolerated? You perhaps, as a strong man, may bear it; and so also can I endure it, as I have endured many other things. It is, however, too serious an evil to be neglected; and as the

---

\* I am told by a learned friend that this 'choir-bishop' should be a *country* or *country-town* bishop; the mistake being in the Greek, Χορεπίσκοπος, instead of Χωρεπίσκοπος—not Χορὸς, a choir, but Χῶρος, a place.—*Translator*.

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 77, p. 831. Gregory wrote this epistle from the hot-baths of Xanxaris, where he was staying, by the advice of his physicians, on account of his health.

best emperors have not suffered it, so be you willing to correct what has been done amiss.’<sup>1</sup>

Gregory preserved a continued interest, not only in the *ecclesiastical*, but also in the *civil* concerns of his fatherland. He endeavoured everywhere to avert disorder and mischief—to establish love and peace. The inhabitants of Nazianzum had on some occasion (probably of tumultuary excitement, which was at that time so easily called forth by any act of military despotism) provoked the anger of the Imperial lieutenant, Olympius; and this Olympius had determined to punish, or rather to revenge himself upon the refractory part of the conquered people, in a fearful manner, even by the destruction of the city. Gregory was prevented by sickness from appearing personally before the lieutenant (who, as it appears, was kindly disposed towards him), but he wrote to him an excellent epistle,<sup>2</sup> full of urgent exhortations to mercy; in which, among other things, he says: ‘Terrible is the death of one fellow-creature, who to-day is, and to-morrow is no more, and will no more return to us. But much more terrible a thing is it to destroy a city, which an emperor founded, which time enlarged, and succeeding years have fostered. I speak to you of Diocæsarea,<sup>3</sup> which was once a city, but now is

---

<sup>1</sup> We have, besides, two celebrated and longer missives, addressed by Gregory to the presbyter Cledonius, and an epistle to his successor, Nectarius, in which he attacks the Apollinarians. The dogmatic matter of these treatises will be given more suitably in another part of this work.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 49, al. 40, p. 809.

<sup>3</sup> Nazianzum had also the name of Diocæsarea. See above, p. 13, note. Pliny, in his *Nat. Hist.*, vi. 3, mentions Diocæsarea among the cities of Cappadocia, but not Nazianzum. He seems, however, to take them for one and the same city.

so no longer, if you are not merciful to it. Imagine, I pray you, while I lend it voice, that it is now fallen down before you, and through me addresses you. Clothed with mourning garments, her hair shorn off, as in a tragedy, she thus appeals to you: ‘Stretch forth thine hand to me, who am prostrate before thee on the ground, and help my weakness; increase not the calamities of the time, and destroy not what the Persians have still left to us. Surely it is far nobler to raise up again fallen cities, than to destroy those that are already suffering distress. Be rather a builder of cities, by either making them again to flourish, or, at least, by preserving them in their present condition. Do not allow it to be said, that till your government it was a city, but from that time was so no longer; and let not the melancholy tale be told of you, that you received it as a city, but left it a desolate place, where the eye would rest only on elevations and depressions, and on heaps of ruins, the signs of a former city.’ Thus far Gregory speaks in the name of the city; he then subjoins exhortations in his own person, while he declares it to be undoubtedly right to punish the guilty, but too cruel to plunge a whole community into misery, on account of the foolhardiness of some few young men. Gregory appears also to plead for the more merciful treatment of the authors of the tumult, while he also remarks how greatly they had been provoked: ‘They mourned, as it were, for their mother, who had been put to death; they could not endure to be called citizens, and yet be without a city (*i. e.*, without<sup>1</sup> political

---

<sup>1</sup> Μητρὸς ὑπερήλγησαν νεκρουμένης, οὐκ ᾔνεγκαν πολῖται καλεῖσθαι, καὶ εἶναι ἀπόλιδες. The city of Nazianzum had probably been deprived of considerable privileges.



rights); it drove them mad, and in that state of mind they violated the laws, and forfeited their own interests; the unexpected misfortune deprived them of their senses. But must the city for that reason be destroyed? Far be it from a distinguished man like thee to order such a thing to be done!’

This epistle appears not to have failed of its contemplated effect, for in another address, in which Gregory laments the recal of Olympius, he gives the most flattering testimony to his good government, and assures him that his departure would be deplored, that he himself would bear away with him great riches, and such as governors seldom collected, viz., a good reputation, and the privilege of being inscribed on the hearts of all in indelible characters.<sup>1</sup> The friendly relation in which Gregory stood towards this governor is still farther shown by a whole series of letters,<sup>2</sup> which, for the most part, were directed to the effecting some good for the unfortunate and those who had been unjustly persecuted, or to obtain a remission of too severe a punishment.

From his solitary abode Gregory frequently took upon himself, with affectionate solicitude, the charge of *individual persons and whole families*. Strict and severe as he was towards himself, we yet always find in him a true fellow-feeling for the peculiar circumstances of others. While he rejoiced with them that rejoiced, he

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 50, al. 41, p. 811. In the same epistle Gregory remarks, that through the departure of Olympius they would again become the *second* Cappadocia; whereas, through him, they had been raised to the rank of the *first*.

<sup>2</sup> See *Epist.* 172, and the seven which follow it; pp. 879—883.

not only wept with those who wept, but also assisted them where it was possible. He, who had himself renounced marriage and extolled the virgin-state, yet honoured, in return, the married state as God's divine appointment, and laboured always to maintain domestic relations in purity and holiness. He, who in many moments of his advanced age felt painfully how lonely he was in the world, without wife and children,<sup>1</sup> could rejoice with real sympathy in the happiness of two persons so bound together in love. It was with this feeling that he thus congratulates a young friend, named Eusebius, on his marriage:<sup>2</sup> 'Euopia, your beloved, is now thine; the moment of your marriage is arrived; the happiness of your life is made secure; the prayers of your parents are heard, and I, who ought properly to have been present, and have taken part in your solemn service, (as indeed I had even promised,) must be at a distance. What we wish for, we readily hope to enjoy; and we easily deceive ourselves, when we would gladly do a thing. I have even several times attempted to set out, then again I hesitated, and have at last been overcome by sickness. Others, then, must invoke the powers of love, (for playful mirth becomes the nuptial festivity,) and describe the beauty of the bride with a painter's skill, and then, by way of contrast, the bridegroom's

---

<sup>1</sup> This loneliness in the world is excellently expressed in the following lines, in which he touchingly laments, that he knows not what hand would close his eyes. *Carm.* viii. 11 et seq. p. 77:

Ἄθρονος, ἀπτολίεθρος, ἄπαις, τεκέεσσι μεμλῶς,  
 Ζῶων ἡμαρ ἐπ' ἡμαρ ἀειπλανέεσσι πόδεσσι,  
 Ποῖ ῥίψω τόδε σῶμα; τί μοι τέλος ἀντιβολήσει;  
 Τίς γῆ; τίς δὲ τάφος με φιλόξενος ἀμφικαλύψει,  
 Τίς δ' ὅσσοις μινυθοῦσιν ἐμοῖς ἐπὶ δάκτυλα θήσει; . . .

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 171, p. 878.

gracefulness; and, lastly, bedeck the bridal-bed with complimentary addresses, as with flowers. I also will sing *to you both* my marriage-song: 'The Lord bless you out of Sion, and bestow harmony on your married-state! Mayest thou by his blessing see thy sons (and sons' sons I had almost said) still nobler than thyself!' This is what I should have asked for you, if I had been present; and I now earnestly invoke it upon you.' In another somewhat more grave epistle,<sup>1</sup> in which Gregory greets a certain person, named Diocles, on the occasion of his marriage, he says: 'One of the highest and greatest blessings is, that Christ is present in the marriage-solemnity. But where *He* is, there also is good order, there water becomes wine, there, generally, everything is changed for the better.'

As in these instances we see Gregory displaying a lively interest in domestic enjoyments, so we also find him exerting his influence beneficially where the happiness of a family, or the pure relations of the married life, were in danger of being disturbed. He endeavoured not only to prevent divorce, proceeding in such cases with great tact and discretion, (as several of his letters show,<sup>2</sup>) but he also exerted himself to remove the minor discrepancies which had crept in between married people. Remarkable in this respect is a half-jesting epistle<sup>3</sup> of Gregory's to Nicobulus, the husband of his niece Alypiana, in which he exhibits, in some excellent remarks, the unreasonableness of his ideas in treating the externals of his wife as mean and insignificant. 'Thou jeerest

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 193, p. 890.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 176, p. 881. *Epist.* 181, p. 884. *Epist.* 211, p. 904.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 155, p. 871.

me (he says) about Alypiana, as if she were too small of stature, and unworthy of thy stately size, O thou large, and powerful, and immeasurable one in form and strength! I have now learnt for the first time that the soul is to be measured, and virtue weighed; that rocks are more precious than pearls, and ravens superior to nightingales. Take now to thyself thy stature and those many feet in height which thou missest in thy wife, and be, I pray thee, as great as the famous Aloïdæ; for thou canst guide the steed, and hurl the spear, and thy delight is in the chase; but she, forsooth, does nothing, for no great strength is required to hold the shuttle, to handle the thread, and to sit at the loom!

For that is the glory of women.<sup>1</sup>

Τὸ γὰρ γέρας ἐστὶ γυναικῶν.

Or, if thou wilt add this also, that she is bowed down for the sake of prayer, that she is constantly occupied with God in great emotion of mind;—what, I ask thee, is thy largeness and height of body here by comparison? Observe, however, her becoming silence; listen to her when she speaks; and see how unadorned she is, how active as a mistress, how economically she manages her house, how she loves her husband. Thou wilt then say, with the Lacedæmonian: ‘the soul truly is not to be measured;’ and though we are, as to each other, external, we must look to the inner man if we would know one another.<sup>2</sup> When thou hast learnt to look at the matter

---

<sup>1</sup> This is an *application* (not an exact quotation) of an expression in the *Iliad*, iv. 323: Τὸ γὰρ γέρας ἐστὶ γερόντων. Or, xvi. 457: Τὸ γὰρ γέρας ἐστὶ θανόντων.

<sup>2</sup> . . . . καὶ δεῖ τὸν ἐκτὸς ἰόντα πρὸς τὸν ἐκτὸς βλέπειν ἄνθρωπον, as it stands in the printed text; but, without a doubt, it should be, πρὸς τὸν ἐντὸς, κ.τ.λ. Who this Lacedæmonian was, and where the passage is to be found, I cannot specify.



thus, thou wilt cease to jest at her expense by laughing at the smallness of her figure, and wilt bless God for thy happy marriage.<sup>1</sup>

The letters which Gregory wrote to, and concerning, a person whom he had greatly befriended (and who is addressed as *Sacerdos*), are particularly beautiful. This *Sacerdos* had already, in his early youth, devoted himself with earnest zeal to a life of piety, (see *Epist.* 212,) and thereby gained the love of Gregory (who, with especial distinction, calls him his son—*Epist.* 93), and attracted the attention of other distinguished ecclesiastics. He became a presbyter, and subsequently the superintendent of a considerable institution for the poor,<sup>2</sup> probably that which was founded by Basil at Cæsarea, and which was extremely important and beneficial. He seems, at the same time, to have been the head of a monastery, or (more probably) of the monks who had devoted themselves to the care of the poor and sick in that institution. It came to pass, however, (we are not positively told from what cause,) that *Sacerdos* had a misunderstanding with one of his friends, Eudocius,<sup>3</sup> and thereby, probably, with Helladius, the bishop of Cæsarea. This disagreement resulted in the removal of *Sacerdos* from

---

<sup>1</sup> This Nicobulus, who is here, half in play and half in earnest, set right by Gregory, appears, however, from some of the other epistles, to have possessed many excellent qualities, and to have done the state good service. At least, Gregory employed himself earnestly in his cause, when he had become involved in unfortunate circumstances, and wrote, on his account, a whole series of letters of recommendation.—*Epist.* 46, 48, 107, 116, 160, 178, 179, 188, 218.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 233. Ὁ τιμιώτατος καὶ θεοφιλέστατος υἱὸς ἡμῶν Σακερδῶς ὁ συμπρεσβύτερος, πτωχείου προέστηκε τῶν ἐπισήμων πολυανθρώπου, εὐσεβείας τε ἔνεκα καὶ τῆς εἰς τὸ πρᾶγμα σπουδῆς.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 235 and 236, tom. ii.

his appointment, and his being persecuted by these parties. He had till then led a very quiet, undisturbed life, as to externals, and was not accustomed to vexations and trials of this sort. Gregory, therefore, considered it all but a duty to remind his friend, that such experiences were necessary for the formation of a truly pious and purified mind. He wrote to him several excellent letters. ‘If (he says)<sup>1</sup> you expected to meet with nothing unpleasant when you devoted yourself to the pursuit of wisdom, your very beginning was without wisdom, and I cannot but blame those who educated you; if you did expect it, then thank God for the time in which it did not befall you. But if it now befall you, either bear it courageously, or know that your vow was a mere lie.’ In another letter,<sup>2</sup> after showing from his own experience how a man can become truly steadfast and approved only by trials, he says: ‘What greater benefit can we partake of than such trials? If you understand it aright, *you will thank God for the injustice you have suffered, even though you cannot thank those who have done it to you.*’ A third, and somewhat longer letter<sup>3</sup> contains quite as striking a remark: ‘*What can be dreadful to us? Nothing but the falling away from God and godliness.* Let all things else turn out as God may order them, whether he guides us now by the gentle instruments of justice in his right hand, or by those of a contrary character in his left. He, the director of our life, knows wherefore he does so. One thing only will we fear, lest we do anything unworthy of a wise man. We have fed the poor, we have exer-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 214, p. 905.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 215, p. 905.

<sup>3</sup> *Epist.* 216, p. 905.

cised brotherly love, we have joined with pleasure in holy songs as long as it was granted us to do so. It is not permitted any longer; we will think, then, of something else; for *grace is never poor*. We will live for ourselves, devote ourselves to contemplation, purify our minds for the reception of heavenly impressions, which probably is a more holy occupation than the above-mentioned. We are not so constituted as to complain that we have lost all when one thing fails us; but if fair hope be still with us, we have still something remaining.'

Gregory wrote another series of letters,<sup>1</sup> in order to bring about a reconciliation between Sacerdos and his opponents; with what success we know not exactly. Sacerdos subsequently travelled to Constantinople on his own affairs, with introductory letters from Gregory.<sup>2</sup> We might *thence* conclude, that, being still persecuted, he went thither to obtain justice. It is certain, however, that Sacerdos departed out of this life before Gregory; since we possess a beautiful letter addressed by the latter to the sister of Sacerdos, the pious Thecla,<sup>3</sup> in which he consoles her on the loss of her brother. 'From whence, then, (he says, among<sup>4</sup> other things)—whence had the good Sacerdos his origin? Was it not

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 216, 217, 235, 236, 237.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 91 and 92, p. 845.

<sup>3</sup> This woman lived in solitude, in the neighbourhood of a martyr's chapel, in prayer, meditation, and spiritual exercises. Gregory addressed several letters to her.—*Epist.* 200, 201, 202, pp. 897—899. In his 201st *Epistle* he says to her:—*εἶδομεν γὰρ σοῦ το στερέωμα τῆς εἰς Χριστὸν πίστεως, καὶ τὴν ἐπαινετὴν ἐρημίαν, καὶ τὸν φιλόσοφον ἰδιασμόν· ὅτι πάντων χωρισθεῖσα τῶν τοῦ κόσμου τερπνῶν, Θεῷ μόνῳ συνέκλεισας σεαυτήν, καὶ τοῖς ἀγίοις μάρτυσιν, οἷς παροικεῖς.*

<sup>4</sup> *Epist.* 202, p. 899.

from God? And where is Sacerdos now? With God. With no reluctance (I know full well) did he depart out of the reach of envy and from the contest with the Evil-one. And whence are we? Are we not also from thence? And whither shall we go for perfect freedom? Is it not to the same Lord? Happy will it be for us, if we can do this with the same confidence!’

At this period Gregory often received young men, in order to assist them in their studies. He particularly interested himself in his young kinsman, Nicobulus, son of the above-mentioned Nicobulus and Alympiana. He wrote, in the name of this young man, a poem of some length,<sup>1</sup> with the view of obtaining for him his parents’ consent for a journey to Greece. He also furnished him with several introductory letters to celebrated teachers.<sup>2</sup> Gregory supplied other youths also with similar epistles, since he kept up an intimate correspondence with many of the most distinguished masters in philosophy and rhetoric.

---

### CHAPTER III.

#### GREGORY’S EPISTLES AND POEMS.

So many extracts have already been given from Gregory’s epistles, and the composition of the same (if we judge only from the number of those which remain to us) must have occupied so considerable a portion of the time spent by him in his solitary retirement at Arianzum, that it would not be superfluous to

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen* l. p. 112, 115.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 115, 116, 117, p. 853 et seq.



say something generally concerning his *Epistles*, even if we did not possess some remarkable declarations by Gregory himself, respecting this very point. It is not to be denied that the epistles of Gregory belong to his best literary productions. Many of them are composed with great industry, and a good number of them were manifestly calculated, not only for the use of the individual recipients, but also for a wider circle of readers. It must therefore be pleasant to us to hear expressly from Gregory himself the rules according to which, in his judgment, a good letter should be composed.

He attaches, in the first place, great importance to genuine, laconic brevity. ‘To write laconically is not to write a few syllables, but to say much in a few words. In this sense, I call Homer brief in expression, but Antimachus prolix. And how? Because I measure a poem by its contents, and not by the number of letters.<sup>1</sup> He explains himself still farther on this point, as on many others, in an epistle to Nicobulus :’<sup>2</sup> ‘Of those who write letters (for I may be allowed to say something to you on this subject), some write at too great length, others are too brief; both fail of the proper medium. They are like persons shooting at a mark, who shoot, some above, some below; both, however, miss it, though for different reasons. The proper kind of letter-writing consists in the happy medium; we must neither write

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 3, p. 769. As a specimen of a laconic composition, by Gregory himself, we may take an epistle to Libanius, which he probably wrote in the name of a mother, who wished to recommend to the celebrated rhetorician her son, who was going to the Academy:—‘I, a mother, send a son to thee, a father; the natural mother to thee, the father of eloquence. As I have cared for him, so do thou.’—*Epist.* 203, p. 899.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 209, p. 903.

too long a one, if we have not much of importance to say, nor too short a one, when our matter for it is great. With respect to clearness or perspicuousness, it is obvious that, in letter-writing, we should avoid as much as possible the oratorical style, and fall more into the tone of familiar chatting.<sup>1</sup> To express all this briefly, that is the best and most beautiful letter which can carry with it the convictions of the unlearned and learned reader; the former, in so far as it is adapted to the comprehension of the many: the latter, inasmuch as, while it is intelligible to all, it speaks a higher language to him. It is certainly a troublesome thing to be obliged to interpret a letter as if we were solving an enigma. The third quality of a good letter is agreeableness; this we shall attain, if we write nothing that is dry and repulsive, nothing without point or ornament,<sup>2</sup> but polished up, as people say; the epistolary style, therefore, does not exclude similes, proverbs, and pithy aphorisms, nor yet playful wit, or words of double meaning (*dunkle Worte*) by which it is, as it were, sweetened. We must, however, also avoid the abuse of these things. Their absence, it is true, shows the want of education; their abuse, an insatiable appetite for them. Everything of the kind is to be applied sparingly, like purple in the texture of our clothing. Figurative expressions we also admit, yet few in number, and those unobjectionable. But antithesis, and playing with syllogisms and nicely-articulated propositions, we would leave to the Sophists; and if we ever

<sup>1</sup> Περὶ δὲ τῆς σαφηνίας, ἐκεῖνο γνώριμον· ὅτι χρὴ φεύγοντα τὸ λογοειδές, ὅσον ἐνδέχεται, μᾶλλον εἰς τὸ λαλικὸν ἀποκλίνειν.

<sup>2</sup> We read in the printed text, *εὐκόρητα*; it must, however, be *ἀκόρητα*, unornamented.

make use of them, we would do it more in play than in earnest. My last rule I will give in the words of an ingenious man, who relates, that when the birds disputed among themselves for the mastery, and one presented himself with this ornament and another with that, the eagle was the most beautiful amongst them, simply because it was not remarked that he was beautiful. To this point, therefore, we should particularly attend in writing letters, viz., to be unadorned, and, as much as possible, natural. Thus much briefly concerning letters; what has been here said, however, is not to be applied to me, who have my heart oppressed with weightier matters. What else is wanting to complete the subject you will gain for yourself by careful study; for you are willing to learn, and those persons who are conversant with these things will instruct you fully therein.' One cannot but see that, although Gregory in the last quoted words appears to disclaim it, he yet here develops the rules which he himself was accustomed to observe in the composition of his epistles. In fact, his letters are, for the most part, short, clear, expressed in beautiful yet unadorned language—in a word, excellently written. The language in which they are clothed is generally suited to the object which he wished to obtain; and if, here and there, anything ornamented or far-fetched in thought or expression has slipped in, it seems as if occasionally (when, for instance, he writes to sophists or rhetoricians, and other persons who paid homage to the perverted taste of the time) he had conceded somewhat to the requirements of the immediate readers of his epistles. Gregory himself prepared the collection of his epistles, at least of the greatest part of them, at the request of Nicobulus, whom we have

already several times mentioned, and who wished to see them collected, from the conviction that much useful information was contained in this correspondence.<sup>1</sup> We have therefore to thank him for them.

Besides epistolary writing, the composition of many poems<sup>2</sup> gave occupation to Gregory in his solitude. We could hardly pronounce so favourable a judgment upon these as upon his epistles. The mere circumstance, that Gregory first began to devote himself to poetry at an advanced age, and in a state of ascetic retirement, is a proof that no great fulness and power of the spirit of poetry naturally dwelt in him; else, without doubt, it would have made itself known earlier. On the other hand, we might also conclude from thence, that his writing of poetry was not the passing effusion of youthful prattle, but that a real, if not a rich vein of poetry was embedded in his nature. His poetic sense expressed itself, not unfrequently, in earlier life in his orations; afterwards, when he had no longer any occasion to express his poetic conceptions in an oratorical garb, he fell more into the formal exhibition of his thoughts in regular versification. Hence, however, resulted this untowardness, that the orations which he wrote in his earlier days were occasionally too poetical, while the poems, which he composed in his old age, are,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 208, p. 209.

<sup>2</sup> The greater number and the most important of Gregory's poems are in the second volume of the edition of his works by Billy and Morel. There are some, also, in the following publications:—Jac. Tollii, *Insignia Itinerarii Italici, Traj. ad Rhen.* MDCXCVI. pp. 1—105; Muratori, *Anecdota Græca*, Patav. MDCCIX. pp. 1—217; Jacobs, *Antholog. Græc.*, vol. ii. There are also a few scattered elsewhere. See, on this point, Fabricii, *Bibliothec. Græc.*, vol. viii. p. 416 et seq.



even more frequently, too prosaic. On this account, too, these poems of Gregory must necessarily have wanted the proper poetical keeping, because they were subservient to an almost absorbing object, moral or religious, but external to the poetry itself. Honourable as this is to him as a man and a theologian, it was disadvantageous to him as a poet; for what he produced from such motives and in such a tone of mind, was rather the fruit of reflection and of calm consideration than of that truly poetic, creative energy, which is unconsciously drawn on to impart its feelings; and the *charm of originality*, which commands the hearts of all hearers—the ease, the bewitching brightness, which characterise the true poet—could not express themselves in his poetry. In their stead, he was obliged rather to exhibit the poetic tone in an external manner; that is, by means of figures and tropes, by ornamental or high-sounding expressions, which he only too often borrowed unsuitably from other poets. And hence again arose frequently the strange inconsistency, that perfectly simple, ordinary, and highly prosaic thoughts are wrapt up in a cloud of figurative language, and, apparently, poetic forms. This holds good even of Gregory's better poems; not to speak of those which treat of perfectly dry, unpoetic subjects, while, for instance, they enumerate the plagues of Egypt or the canonical books of Holy Scripture, compare the two genealogies of Jesus, exhibit the Ten Commandments in a few verses; and the like.

Most of Gregory's poems have the fault of length and diffusiveness. He often involves his thoughts and sentiments in a multitude of words, from the midst of which it is difficult to find the simple truth; but then

again we meet there, after toiling through much that is tiresome, with beautiful passages, full of deep feeling, and truly attractive. Some of his shorter pieces, which evidently issued from the pure feeling of the moment, might probably satisfy even the more rigid critic. Of these, however, there are but a few. He succeeded particularly in apophthegms, moral sentences, short and pregnant didactic poems. But as soon as he falls, in the course of his longer didactic poems, into dogmatic polemics and subtilties, or a discursive moralising strain, all claims to poetry naturally disappear. In thus speaking, however, we must not forget that Gregory actually looked upon it as a *duty* to compose in this style. In this respect, his poetry reveals the same active struggle which displays itself in his orations, his zeal for orthodoxy, and his opposition to the heretical opinions of his generation. Several heretics, such as Paul of Samosata, Arius, and Apollinaris,<sup>1</sup> had given a great impulse to their doctrines by putting them into a poetic form, and thereby into the mouths and minds of the people. Gregory wished to counteract the mischief which had thus been occasioned, by means of poems written in an orthodox spirit, and a course of poetical polemics. Another similar motive for the composing of his poems has been mentioned in an earlier part of this work; they were

---

<sup>1</sup> In reference to the last of these, Gregory speaks thus at the end of his first epistle to Cledonius (see also, *Orat.* li. p. 745). Εἰ δὲ οἱ μακροὶ λόγοι καὶ τὰ νέα ψαλτήρια, καὶ ἀντίφθογγα τῷ Δαβίδ, καὶ ἡ τῶν μέτρων χάρις, ἡ τρίτη διαθήκη νομίζεται, καὶ ἡμεῖς ψαλμολογήσομεν, καὶ πολλὰ γράφομεν καὶ μετρήσομεν. In the poem *To his own Verses* (pp. 248, 249), Gregory specifies the different reasons which had induced him to compose poetry; among others, that he had wished to create thereby an amusing occupation for his sickly old age.

intended to be a substitute for the heathen poets, which (at least for a time) had been withdrawn from the Christians by Julian, and which Gregory, on general grounds, saw with apprehension in the hands of young Christians, because they might possibly incite to immoral practices. How little, however, the poetical compositions of Gregory could become a properly-poetical compensation for those works of Grecian genius, is sufficiently obvious from what has been already said.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### GREGORY'S DEATH; HIS CHARACTER.

EVEN the composition of poetry belonged, in the estimation of Gregory, to the ascetic practices,<sup>1</sup> whereby he sought to subdue all the desires of sense, and to direct his thoughts at all times to the worthiest objects. He continued these practices, in their whole extent and compass, even in old age with all the strictness of youthful zeal.<sup>2</sup> Even if many of the descriptions of his strict asceticism which he gives us in his poems—where, for instance, he speaks of himself as living alone in a cavern among wild beasts, going about without shoes, content with *one* coarse garment, sleeping on the ground covered only with a sack,<sup>3</sup> and so forth—even if such represen-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Carmen in Versus suos*, line 34, p. 248.

Πρῶτον μὲν ἡθέλησα, τοῖς ἄλλοις καμῶν,  
 "Οὕτω πεδῆσαι τὴν ἐμὴν ἀμαρτίαν.

<sup>2</sup> Compare *Carm.* xviii. p. 93; xix. p. 93; lix. p. 136; *Epist.* 196, p. 894.

<sup>3</sup> *Carm.* ii. 140, et seq. p. 70; *Carm.* vi. et seq. p. 75, and elsewhere.

tations may be rather poetically dressed up, yet it is clear, from his repeated declarations, that he renounced, almost entirely, the comforts and enjoyments which can agreeably cheer the life of man generally, and especially of an aged man. The older he grew, the more he desired (since no close family-ties any longer bound him to men) to devote himself to God, in solitary separation from the world. His life henceforth became more and more a mere preparation for death.

During the whole of his earlier life Gregory had vacillated between two antagonist principles, in the happy combination of which he but seldom succeeded,—viz., solitary, ascetic contemplation and ecclesiastical activity. His education had already taught him to love the calm, contemplative life, and to look upon it as the highest object of desire, and it only required an impulse to develop more decidedly the bias that was slumbering in his soul. The moral spirit of his age, and the then condition of the Church, confirmed him still more in this direction. On the other hand, he was prompted to active exertion in ecclesiastical concerns by a powerful sense of duty, in which he recognised the inward call of the Divine Spirit, as well as many inducements, and even obligations, from without, in which he likewise saw the finger of God directing him. Thus he was ever being drawn out from retirement into active life, and was again withdrawn from the business of life by an inextinguishable longing after contemplative solitude. And this gave to his life a restless, vacillating, and unsettled character. At length the first impressions of his youth and the dormant requirements of his heart prevailed, and Gregory withdrew himself completely into solitude. In connexion, however, with the customary ascetic



exercises, he gave himself up to that contemplation which, in accordance with his peculiar bias, seemed to him the surest and most direct way to a perfectly godly life, and to the closest connexion and most intimate intercourse with God. This he describes in the following passage:<sup>1</sup> ‘ Nothing ever appeared to me so glorious as, with the senses, as it were, locked up, existing already out of the flesh and the world, retiring into oneself, meddling with no earthly business, (except in extreme necessity,) conversing only with God and oneself, to live already exalted above the visible world; to bear about upon oneself heavenly forms and impressions, pure and unmixed with the changeable forms of earth; in fact, to be and to become ever more and more a bright mirror of God and godly things; to obtain light in addition to light, the clearer in addition to the less clear; to enjoy already in hope the good things of another world; to associate with angels; while yet moving on the earth to take leave of it, and to be transported by the Spirit to higher regions.’

Gregory made use of, as a means of higher moral purification, even the bodily sufferings with which he had to struggle severely in these his last years. His health, which, as it appears, was not strong by nature, and had been weakened by rigid asceticism, was now also affected by the infirmities of age. But he looked upon this infliction only as a means of spiritual training for a more complete education, and the sanctifying of the inner man. He wrote thus on the subject to his

---

<sup>1</sup> *Orat.* ii. 7, p. 14; xx. 1, p. 376. These expressions certainly belong to an earlier period of his life: but his notions on this point were uniformly the same.

friend Philagrius,<sup>1</sup> who had also much to suffer from bodily discomfort: 'It becomes you, a man so well-instructed in heavenly things, not to succumb to the body, but to bear suffering like a wise man, and now especially to purify your will, to show yourself exalted above the fetters of sense, and to look upon illness as a means of training us for our greatest happiness. But sickness becomes to us that greatest good, if it teach us to despise the body and all that is bodily, and, generally, all that is changeable and transitory; devoting ourselves wholly to that which is heavenly. So that, instead of living for the present, we live rather for the future, and make use of this life (as Plato says) only to learn how to die.' He wrote at another time to the same<sup>2</sup> friend in these words: 'I am suffering from sickness, and I am glad, not that I suffer, but that I may thereby become a teacher of patience to others. Since, then, I cannot now free myself from suffering, I look upon it as gain to bear it patiently, and as in joy, so also in pain to thank God; for I am convinced, *that nothing which befalls us by the appointment of Supreme Wisdom is without good reason*, even though it may not appear so to us.' Gregory was so entirely convinced of the moral benefit of bodily suffering for the improvement of the inner man, that he was thereby able to comfort and strengthen others. As he was once expounding a psalm in this sense to his friend Philagrius, while the latter was suffering severe pains, Philagrius was so affected thereby, that extending his hands towards the east (whither it was usual to turn in prayer), he looked up to heaven and exclaimed: 'I thank thee, Father, Creator

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 70, al. 64, p. 826 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Epist.* 69, al. 63, p. 826. Compare other beautiful remarks on the same subject, in *Epist.* 63, al. 57, p. 820 et seq.

of all men, that thou showest us kindnesses even against our inclination; that thou purifiest the inner through the outer man, and conductest us through sufferings and calamities to a happy end, in the way that seemeth best to thee!’<sup>1</sup>

Thus also Gregory himself, through a varied course of inward and outward struggles, and finally by bodily suffering, was brought by the Father of his days to the happy termination which he had so long and earnestly desired. He died, probably in the place where he had been born, A.D. 389 or 390. We have nothing more exact handed down to us as to the circumstances of his death.

This, then, is the life of Gregory of Nazianzum. If at the conclusion of it we should attempt a sketch of him, both in his external and internal features, the principal lineaments would be the following:—

Gregory was of middle stature; rather pale, yet so that it became him. His hair was thin, and whitened by age; his short beard was thicker, and his eyebrows prominent. He had a scar over his right eye. His countenance was expressive of kindness, and prepossessing; his demeanour simple and unaffected. The fundamental tone of his *inner* nature was piety. His soul, full of ardent, energetic faith, was devoted to God and Christ; while a lofty zeal for divine things marked the course of his whole life. This zeal certainly displayed itself in a strict assertion and defence of certain definitions of faith which that age\* considered of especial

---

<sup>1</sup> *Epist.* 66, al. 60, p. 824.

\* If by ‘certain definitions of faith’ are meant the doctrines and declarations of the *Nicene Creed*, (for which it is obvious Gregory was a devoted champion), surely they are to be ‘considered of especial weight’ in *all* ages.—*Translator*.

weight, as well as in an active contest (not free from the influences of party-spirit) against opposite opinions; it showed itself, however, no less in a real and living conception of active Christianity, whose establishment and extended influence in the minds of men was, above all others, an object of the greatest weight with him. His asceticism was carried too far, and was injurious to his health; it did not, however, degenerate into an affected sanctity. It served him as a means of raising and freeing the mind, without being considered by him as, in and by itself, a higher state of virtue. An innate love of solitude, strengthened as it had been by education, hindered him from devoting all his powers to the active promotion of the common good. His retired life, which did not admit of his acquiring a familiar knowledge of men and of the world, made him occasionally incautious in placing confidence, sometimes distrustful and austere in judging of others. He required much from others, but most of all from himself. Susceptible for high and great resolves, and full of ardent zeal for all that is good, he was not always steadfast and persevering in the execution of it. In enduring and in contending for the truth he was generous and high-minded, temperate in victory, humble in prosperity, never flattering the great and powerful, but an ever-ready helper of the oppressed and the persecuted; above all, a loving father to the poor. With these most excellent qualities in the character of Gregory were mixed counterbalancing defects; he was not quite free from vanity, he was very irritable and passionate, but he also readily forgave, and cherished no secret ill-will. He was a man ever occupied in holy practices, and striving after the highest and the best; but he was not (as no human being is) perfect!



## APPENDIX I.

CONCERNING THE YEAR AND PLACE OF GREGORY'S  
BIRTH.

IT is singular that the place, as well as the time of the birth of so celebrated a person as Gregory (who himself gives us tolerably detailed accounts of his life) are yet not exactly ascertained. Of the *day* of his birth (though it has been settled ecclesiastically) nothing can be historically affirmed, since very different opinions exist even as to the *year*. We have certainly a rather ancient account respecting the time of Gregory's birth, but still even that is too recent to be taken as positively decisive, and especially as we do not know from what source it is derived. I refer to a notice, of the tenth or eleventh century, in the *Lexicon* of Suidas, which asserts that Gregory died in the thirteenth year of the government of Theodosius the Great, at the age of ninety, or somewhat more.<sup>1</sup> Now Theodosius entered upon the empire of the East on the 19th of January A. D. 379; Gregory died, according to this account, A. D. 392, and if he were then ninety years of age, or somewhat older, he must have been born about the year 300 or 301.

This assertion, however, is very decidedly opposed to some points of information which are given in the writ-

---

<sup>1</sup> Suidas, tom. i. p. 497, sub verbo Γρηγόριος . . . . . έλασας δέ περὶ τὰ ἐννεήκοντα ἔτη καὶ ἐπέκεινα, Θεοδοσίου τρίτον καὶ δέκατον ἔτος ἄγοντος καταλύει τὸν βίον.

ings of Gregory himself. He says that he went to Athens in his early youth, and still beardless (noch unbärtig); this, therefore, could not well be later than his twentieth year. He informs us that he was a student at Athens together with Julian. But Julian was at Athens in the year of our Lord 355—consequently Gregory must have continued in Athens till about his fifty-fifth or fifty-sixth year, and his residence there must in all have lasted at least thirty-five years! But this necessary conclusion is refuted by an expression in Gregory's poem concerning his own life, line 238, p. 4:

Καὶ γὰρ πολὺς τέτριπτο τοῖς λόγοις χρόνος.  
Ἦδη τριακοστόν μοι σχεδὸν τοῦτ' ἦν ἔτος.

Here the poet says plainly enough of himself, that when he formed the determination to leave Athens, he was nearly thirty years old. For what else can the phrase *ἐστὶ μοι ἔτος τριακοστόν* mean, than 'I am thirty years of age?' And he might certainly well say that he had spent much time in rhetorical and philosophical studies, since he looked upon these as only preparatory; the object and destination of his life were, from his earliest years, fixed upon theology.<sup>1</sup> As therefore we know from Gregory's mouth, that he left Athens before his thirtieth year, the statement in Suidas, which places that event in his fifty-fifth or fifty-sixth year, destroys itself.

We may wonder how so acute a critic as *Pagi* could undertake to justify the assertion of Suidas (*Critica in*

---

<sup>1</sup> Gregory went to Constantinople, A.D. 379. If he were born in 300, he must then have numbered nearly eighty years. How, at such an age, could he have entered on such an arena, with his already enfeebled body? 'Etoit-ce là un emploi propre à un vieillard de quatre-vingt ans?' is the sensible question of Tillemont.

*Annales Baronii*, 354. xi. xii. xiii. tom. i. p. 481); and how *Le Clerc* (*Bibliothèque Universelle de l'Année* 1690, p. 2) could so blindly follow the lead of Pagi, as to say in his short biography of Gregory: 'Gregoire nâquit, selon la chronologie *la plus exacte*, l'an 300.' Pagi, in order to confirm the chronological decision of Suidas, explains the words already quoted (ἤδη τριακοστόν μου σχεδὸν τοῦτ' ἦν ἔτος), not of Gregory's time of life, but of the time of his residence (Quare erat is annus Gregorio N. ferme tricesimus in eo studio, non vero tricesimus a nativitate ejus), and translates it thus: I had also already resided nearly thirty years at Athens on account of my studies.' Most highly improbable! since we must deviate from the ordinary use of language for the sake of this explanation, and then believe (what is almost incredible) that a man who, from his very cradle, had been destined for the clerical profession, and who, in his riper years, had with the greatest earnestness confirmed that destination, should have lingered thirty years, *i. e.* to his fiftieth year, in the schools of rhetoric. But even granting that improbable explanation of the words, yet Pagi's calculation does not turn out correctly. Certainly, if the assertion of Gregory is not totally inaccurate (*Carmen de Vita sua*, p. 2, line 112, ἀχρονος παρεία, κ.τ.λ.), he came to Athens while still in early youth, most probably before his twentieth year. Now, supposing him to have resided there till his fifty-sixth year, this again would require a longer period than thirty years.

Whilst, then, we entirely disregard this reckoning of Suidas, Pagi, and *Le Clerc*, we establish another in the most natural and sure method. Setting out from certain or highly probable data (which exist in the writings of Gregory himself), we judge from them what is inde-

finite and unknown. Earlier writers have also followed this method in this case, only with a certain caution in regard to one point.

It is necessary to begin with some data from the life of Gregory's father, and particularly with the year of his death. He died, then, according to all the circumstances, in the spring of 374. His son informs us, in his funeral eulogium, that he was, at the time of his death, about a hundred years old, of which he had passed forty-five years in the *priestly office*,\* consequently he must have been in holy orders ever since the year 329 (or 328), and four years before that (as we know full well from the testimony of his son) he had been baptized in the presence of Leontius, who was then on his way to Nicæa. The elder Gregory, therefore, was born in 275 or 276; baptized in 325, ordained in 329, and died A.D. 374.

Now Gregory, in a passage remarkably suited to our purpose, represents his father as thus speaking (in his *Carmen de Vita sua*)—line 512:

Οὕπω τοσοῦτον ἐκμεμέτρηκας βίον,  
"Ὅσος διῆλθε θυσιῶν ἐμοὶ χρόνος.

That is to say, the father wishes to persuade the son to share the duties of the episcopal office with him, and with that view represents to him his own great age in comparison with his son's youth in the words above, which may be rendered: 'Thou hast not yet lived so long a time as I have performed the priestly office (offered the sacrifice);' or, literally, 'Thou hast not yet measured out so long a life, as the time which has already passed to me in my sacrificial character.' Now,

---

\* This term, 'Priester stande,' includes here the *Episcopal* office.—*Translator*.



if we refer the *ὑποίαι* (as every unprejudiced person will do at once) to the oblations which the aged Gregory offered as priest or as bishop, we have then in the passage a very clearly settled date; Gregory, the son, was plainly born after his father had been ordained, that is, after the year 329, therefore at the earliest in 330, and, consequently, at least thirty years later than the date assigned by Suidas. This reckoning agrees perfectly with what we know of Gregory's youthful days. He went to Athens, as we have seen, when quite young, somewhere between his eighteenth and twentieth year, and therefore (reckoning from his birth in 330) about A. D. 348—350. He resided there till about his thirtieth year, therefore till about the year 358—360. During his residence in Athens he made the acquaintance of Julian, and he (Julian) was certainly there in 355. Soon after his return home (probably in 361, the same year in which Julian mounted the Imperial throne), Gregory was ordained priest, therefore when he had barely attained the legal age, the thirtieth year; hence his expression, that he had entered the presbyterate very early, nay (according to his decided conviction, and the circumstances of the times), too early.

This well-established reckoning would perhaps have been generally and readily received, if it had not at the same time been necessarily asserted, that the elder Gregory begat several children after he became a priest and a bishop! The Roman-catholic historians, however, considered this fact so insufferable, that they determined to do every kind of violence to the passages adduced, rather than admit their plain and simple meaning.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Several of these unhappy experiments by very learned men are here quoted, on account of their extraordinary character:

And yet what is there bad or intolerable that the elder Gregory should have begotten his son while presbyter, or even bishop? Jerome certainly says (lib. i. *advers. Jovinian.*), at a somewhat later period: 'Certe confiteris,

---

the Jesuit *Papebroch* (*Acta Sanct. Maj.*, tom. ii. p. 370, die nona Maii) attempts to oppose the consentient authority of all the MSS. with a mere conjecture; instead of ὅσος διῆλθε θυσιῶν ἐμοὶ χρόνος, he proposes to read—"Ὅσος διῆλθε ἐτησιῶν ἐμοὶ χρόνος. The *Ετησίαι* are, as everybody knows, the trade-winds. Literally, therefore, the passage means this:—'Thou hast not lived so long as I have witnessed the annual recurrence of the Etesian, or trade-winds.' The expression, of course, is to be taken metaphorically, and its sense may be simply rendered thus:—'Thou art not so old as I am.' But what a *platitude* does the learned man here attribute to the aged Gregory! Was it at all necessary to remark that he, the father, was older than his son? and could he have made the remark in a more singular manner, than by saying that he had witnessed more Etesian winds than his son had lived years? Papebroch, subsequently, acknowledged the unsuitableness of his conjecture, and hazarded a second, but not more happy flight, when he proposes to read:—"Ὅσος διῆλθε δις ἰὼν ἐμοὶ χρόνος. *i. e.* in plain words, 'I am twice as old as you.' This conjecture also carries its most manifest refutation in its forced expression of a simple idea. The Benedictine, *Clemencet*, has tried to help himself in a different way; he allows the reading *θυσιῶν* its due weight, but seeks to escape from its strict sense by an artful explanation. Instead of referring the offering of sacrifice to the priestly state, he refers it merely to the christian state. He thinks that *θυσίαι* betokens only the distribution of the sacrament) in which Gregorius, as a baptized Christian, had participated, or the offering of a spiritual sacrifice. Consequently, the aged Gregory would say nothing more to his son than 'Thou hast not been so long in the world as I have been baptized, or a Christian!' Accordingly, *Clemencet* asserts that Gregory was born when his father was not yet a bishop, but already a Christian, and therefore in the year of our Lord 325 or 326. But, to say nothing of the artificial character of this explanation, it does not at all suit the context. If the aged bishop wished to induce his son to assist him in the duties of his office, what effect would be produced by the statement, that he, the father, had already been a Christian as long as the son had lived?—But it *must*, indeed, have worked strongly on the son, when his father reminded him 'that he had now been a longer period in the priestly office, than the son had been in existence.' The father could not well

non posse esse episcopum, qui in episcopatu filios faciat : alioquin si diprehensus, non quasi, vir tenebitur, sed quasi adulter damnabitur ;' and other strict Fathers, as *Ephranius*, agree with him. But it has been already remarked by a learned and unsophisticated Roman-catholic explorer of history, and also sufficiently proved, that the notions and regulations which obliged priests to entire abstinence in respect to marriage,<sup>1</sup> had at that time by no means acquired a decided or general validity, and, indeed, in many countries permitted an exception. Celibacy was held as the preferable practice, without on that account being reckoned as the unconditional law ; he who followed this practice was admired, but still he who did not observe it was not condemned. What wonder, then, if the elder Gregory, who appears to us generally as possessed of an independent mind, should have complied rather with the wish of his heart for domestic happiness, than with the severe notions of a *part* of his contemporaries, who wished to withhold it from priest and bishop alike !

Other difficulties, which have been started against this mode of reckoning, are still more easily got rid of. We must assume therewith, that the elder Gregory was

---

have pressed upon the mind of his son, in a more brief and lively manner, his own want of help, and the son's obligation to afford him assistance. The Cardinal *Baronius* also cannot satisfy the unprejudiced inquirer, when he declares the whole phraseology of the passage to be an hyperbole. The form and structure of the words are of that kind, that we have no occasion at all to seek for anything hyperbolical in them ; the words themselves are so quiet, simple, and precise, that we must take them for an actual error, rather than an hyperbole, if we do not choose to interpret them according to their nearest and plainest sense.

<sup>1</sup> See the learned investigations of Tillemont, in the *Mémoires pour servir à l'Histoire Eccles.*, tom. ix. p. 695.

already fifty-five years old when he begat his son. But his wife, also, in relation to him, is called ὁμόχρονος καὶ ἴση πολὴ καὶ ἡθροί (of like age, resembling him in her grey hair and habits of thought); and therefore it must be also maintained that Nonna was quite as old, with the improbable assumption that she had borne her first child at so advanced an age! To this it may be answered as follows: When both of them, Gregorius and Nonna, were now at an advanced age, it might readily be said of them, that they were *of the same age or standing*, even though there were a difference of ten years between them. Of an aged, venerable couple, where the husband was about one hundred, and the wife about ninety years old, we should naturally remark that they were of like age, since in their case the difference in point of age has actually ceased to show itself. But Nonna might very well have given birth to her first-born son in her fortieth year, as that is not at all contrary to experience. Nay, we have even positive indications thereof, since Gregory calls his mother expressly ὀψίτοκος, late in bearing (he himself was ὀψιτόκος, late born)—*Carmen de Vita sua*, line 442 et seq. He also not unfrequently compares her with Sarah, and his father with Abraham.

Still more insignificant is the remark, that in his poem *De Rebus suis* (line 307 and 308), which he probably wrote (according to our reckoning) in his fortieth year, he speaks, as he does elsewhere, of his hair already grown grey, and complains of his wearied limbs, and the deadness of his vital powers. Any one who remembers Gregory's ascetic mode of life, and his systematic practice of weakening the body, cannot wonder for a moment at those results.

---



The place of Gregory's birth likewise cannot be exactly ascertained. No perfectly unambiguous expressions relating to it are to be found in his writings. The question, however, only turns on this, whether he was born at the little city of Nazianzum (written also Nazianzus), or at a family estate or village called Arianzum (*alias* Arianzus) in the immediate neighbourhood thereof; a difference of very little importance, since, at all events, he received his earlier education at his father's episcopal house in Nazianzum. Euphrantas, a later bishop of Tyana, says: '*Arianzus* quidem prædium est, unde ortus fuit Gregorius, sub Nazianzo constitutus; and a scholiast on Gregory's *8th Oration* says: ἐρρέθη ἐν Ἀριάνζῳ τῆς Καππαδόκων ἐπαρχίας, ἀφ' ἧς ὠρμῶντο δὴ, καὶ κεῖνται (whence the family sprung, and where they lie buried). So also Nicetas, in his *Commentary on the 16th Oration of Gregory: Arianzus*, ipsius S. Gregorii natalitius pagus, situs in regione Tiberina. This assertion, although resting upon later writers, is probable, for this reason, that it is easily explained how Nazianzum could by mistake be fixed upon as his birth-place, but not so easily how they could have done so as to Arianzum. We have already noticed what Gregory himself says of Nazianzum; but, besides that, the place is scarcely more than mentioned by name in the old writers. *Mannert* has put together in the best possible way all the notices we have of it.<sup>1</sup> We select particularly from his labours what he gives from the narrative of an European traveller, *Paul Lucas*, at the beginning of the eighteenth

---

<sup>1</sup> Mannert's *Geographie der Griechen und Römer.*, vi. Th. p. 267.

century. 'This traveller points out as the locality of the ancient Nazianzum the place called by him Hagibestage, but by Pococke, more correctly, *Hadschi Bertas*. It has the name from a Turkish saint, who founded here a large establishment for the entertainment of all travellers. It is still supported by ecclesiastics, where a noble library of manuscripts, and the seat of learning, are still said to exist. The appearance of extensive ruins proves that a considerable city once stood on the identical spot. This city was *Nazianzum*.' See the rest in Mannert. I only add, that Nazianzum not only appears, in the Latin writers of the middle ages, under the corrupted names of Nanzando, Nazabos, and Nazanza, but that Hieronymus (Jerome) was already in the habit of calling his master, *Gregorius Nazanzenus*.

---

## APPENDIX II.

### CONCERNING THE SECT OF THE HYP SISTARIANS.

As I have already made this sect of the Hypsistarians a subject of inquiry,<sup>1</sup> and as the appearance of another learned work<sup>2</sup> was thereby occasioned,—a work to which I cannot deny the praise of extensive reading and a

---

<sup>1</sup> *De Hypsistariis, seculi post Christum natum quarti secta, commentatio, quam—scripsit* C. Ullmann. Heidelb. Mohr. 1823. Everything that could serve to promote a knowledge of the Hypsistarians is there adduced and quoted from the original sources.

<sup>2</sup> *De Hypsistariis, Opinionibusque, quæ super eis propositæ sunt, commentationem scripsit* Lic. Gulielm. Boehmerus. Præfatus est Neander. Berol. 1824. Herr Boehmer has brought together, and carefully weighed all known opinions, some older and others more recent, concerning this sect. A critical notice of both these works (*i. e.*, that of Boehmer and my own) was communicated by me in the *Heidelberg Jahrbuch* for 1824, No. 47.

cautious judgment (though the author disputes my opinions), I must be concise on this subject now; and the more so, because in point of fact it would be difficult for me to say anything new about it. I also believe that I do not yet possess that perfect freedom from prejudice, and that freedom of judgment, which, in regard to once-settled opinions, can only be acquired after some years, when the subject again becomes fresh and new. I therefore content myself here with a few references and repetitions.

The *sources* from which we can derive information concerning the religious community of the Hypsistarians are (it is well known) very meagre, and consist properly of only two passages; one in the 18th *Oration* of Gregory Nazianzen (§ 5, p. 333), and the other in the work of his friend Gregory of Nyssa (*Adv. Eunom.*, lib. ii. t. ii. p. 440); but both these passages are the more to be depended on, that both the writers were born and lived in the country where the sect of the Hypsistarians flourished. They were also contemporaneous with the existence of the sect; nay, the former of them was born of a father who, in the earlier part of his life, had been a Hypsistarian. Now from these sources the following facts appear: The *Hypsistarians* (who are also called *Hypsistians* by Gregory of Nyssa) worshipped an Almighty God (ὁ παντοκράτωρ μόνος αὐτοῖς σεβάσμος), whom they distinguished by the title of Ὑψιστος, the *Most High*; and this reverence for the Most High was even so peculiarly distinctive of these persons, that they gained the name of Ὑψισταριοι (Hypsistarians) therefrom. In their worship of this god they rejected the use of images (εἰδωλα) and sacrifices; but they had a kind of fire-and-lamp service; *i. e.*, they worshipped the invisible Almighty under the visible signs of fire and light

(τιμῶσι τὸ πῦρ καὶ τὰ λύχνα). The seventh day (Gregory Nazianzen says expressly the Sabbath, τὸ σάββατον) was kept holy by them; they also observed certain laws of meats, but rejected circumcision. Gregory Nazianzen describes them as a half-Jewish, half-heathen sect, and Gregory of Nyssa puts them quite in the same class with the Jews, inasmuch as both Jews and Hypsistarians certainly acknowledged the existence of *one* God, but, in opposition to the Christians, denied that that God was the Father of a Son. This small amount of information is all these sources declare with distinctness. There may have been other features peculiar to the Hypsistarians, but we can arrive at no *certainty* thereon, through the total failure of information.

In establishing my view concerning the origin of the Hypsistarians, I set out from the expression of Gregory Nazianzen: 'The faith of the Hypsistarians is a mixture of heathenish and Jewish religious elements,'—with the remark, that this somewhat rhetorically-formed description of Gregory's may certainly have resulted from the subjective conception he had formed of them, but might also possibly rest upon a good historical basis. Gregory was certainly sufficiently acquainted with the sect to which his father had belonged, not to say anything of them which was historically quite untenable. Now the *Jewish* element which was found in the Hypsistarians, was first and chiefly *monotheism*, or the belief in one God; next, the religious observance of the *seventh day*, or Sabbath; the rejection of *idol*<sup>1</sup> *worship*, and perhaps also *the law of meats*; although on this last point very little can be determined with any certainty, since it is

---

<sup>1</sup> Under this term, we may *properly* understand idol-images, or, *generally*, any created things.



not sufficiently clear whether the words of Gregory Naz. refer to regularly returning fasts, or to a constant and entire abstinence from certain kinds of meat. This last, however, is far more probable, (since a Father of the Church, himself inclined to asceticism, would not have applied the term *μικρολογία* to mere fasting, even when strictly observed,) and we thus have something which *might* very easily have passed *from the Jews* to the Hypsistarians.

The peculiarly *heathen* character of the sect is indicated by Gregory with the words: *τιμῶσι τὸ πῦρ καὶ τὰ λύχνα* (they pay honour to fire and lamps), while at the same time, by the indefinite expression *ἑλληνικῇ πλάνῃ*, he leaves us at liberty to fix upon any heathen worship we think most suitable. But, among them all, which will more naturally occur to the reader of the above words (*τιμῶσι, κ.τ.λ.*) than the *Persian*, the characteristic of which at that time was the religious use of fire and lights, with a purely spiritual meaning, as well as a sensible visible form? The expression, however, seems to imply, not an actual worshipping of fire, but an adoration of the unseen Supreme God under the symbol of fire; just as the purer *Magism* did not consider fire in itself divine, but only to be revered as a holy emblem of the Deity. The Hypsistarians agreed in this with the Persians (as well as with the Jews), that idols were objects of abhorrence to them.

This hypothesis as to the origin of the Hypsistarian creed from a mixture of Jewish and Persian elements is especially confirmed by the fact, that exactly at that time there were found in Cappadocia (the country where alone we discover any certain traces of the sect) many Persian emigrants, who were called by Basil the Great, *Magusians* (Basil. *Epist.* 258); by Strabo, *Magi*

and *Pyrathi* (*Geograph. lib. xv. p. 732, edit. Casaub.*); and, according to the accounts of both writers, they had preserved, even in a foreign land, the religious customs of their fathers. Jews, too, we know, were scattered through all the regions of the Central and the Lesser Asia. How easily *Judaism* and *Parseeism* could be brought into close connexion, had been already shown by the effects of exile: the Jews adopted a Persian element into their religious system, and Cyrus proved by his deeds his reverence for the God of the Jews, the Lord of heaven and earth (2 Chronic., xxxvi. 23—Ezra, i. 2, 3, 4); but still the Persians continued fire-worshippers, after Zoroaster, and the Jews worshippers of Jehovah, after Moses. It is only in the Hypsistarians of the fourth century that a complete blending of Judaism and Parseeism took place, in a properly third form of religion, more simple than the two from which it sprung—a blending which, from the immediate contact of the Jews and Persians, and from the removal of the former as well as the latter from their native country into the midst of strangers (christian and heathen), was very possible, and is also made very probable by many analogous examples in the history of religion, as well as by the inclination of the time to eclecticism and combination in religious matters. Whether now did this commixture originate with the Persians, who acknowledged the superiority of the Jewish monotheism, yet would not relinquish altogether *their own* religious customs? or with the Jews, who wished to simplify the\* ceremonial of

---

\* *Qu.* Might not Dr. Ullmann have found, nearer home, Jews who, to *simplify* their religious worship, have adopted a rationalizing, eclectic Christianity, amounting to little more than Unitarianism?—*Translator.*

their worship, and found a kind of Persian fire-service agreeable for that purpose? or with heathens, who, being placed between Persians and Jews, formed for themselves so simple a kind of religion out of the faith and worship of both nations? It is not easy to come to any decisive conclusion thereon, owing to the scantiness of our information, and the fluctuation of possible suppositions.

The Hypsistarians were, as it seems, *related to the heathenish* Euphemites, or Messalian Syrians and Phœnicians, who, according to the account of Epiphanius (*Hæres.* lxviii. p. 1067. Petav.), professing neither Judaism nor Christianity, but originating from heathenism, certainly admitted the *existence* of several gods, but, with all that, *worshipped only one*, under the name of παντοκράτωρ (the Almighty), and also, according to the words of our author, ‘with great burning of lamps and many lights’ (μετὰ πολλῆς λυχναψίας καὶ φώτων). It is possible that these Euphemites were, in some way or other, connected with Parseeism. Still more remarkable, though less observed, is that which is related by Cyrill of Alexandria (*De Adorat. in Spiritu et Verit.*, lib. iii. t. i. p. 92), in the first half of the fifth century, of a sect which had spread in Palestine and Phœnicia, the members of which called themselves Θεοσεβεῖς (Deicolæ, worshippers of God). *They* also revered one God, who was expressly called ὑψιστος; and Cyrill remarks of them, as Gregory does of the Hypsistarians, that they were neither pure Jews nor pure heathens, since, in addition to the Most High God, they at the same time acknowledged as divine beings exalted objects of creation (τὰ ἐξαιρέτα τῶν κτισμάτων), such as the earth, the heavens, the sun, the moon, and the most distinguished

stars. Here we certainly find monotheism and sabæism connected together in a very peculiar and remarkable manner; but whether such a connexion favours the assumption of a relationship, or even an identity, between the Θεοσεβεῖς and the Hypsistarians, might still be a very doubtful point, since, in my opinion, it cannot be proved that the Hypsistarians actually worshipped any objects of the visible creation. What Herr Böhmer has brought forward against the views of the author, the reader, if he wishes, may read in his *Commentatio*, § 7, p. 35; and also what the author thought he could adduce in defence of his opinion, in the *Heidelberger Jahrbüchern* for 1824, No. 47, p. 744.

A learned reviewer in the *Jena Literat. Zeitung* (December, 1824, No. 238, p. 455), agrees with the author 'in assuming a close relationship between the Hypsistarians, Euchetæ, Magusians, and Deicolanians (*i. e.*, Θεοσεβεῖς); but thinks that these different sects were only ramifications of an older sect, whose origin he would gladly place in the period of general religious fermentation in the first centuries, when so many persons separated themselves from the positive forms of religion, and, retaining more or less of them, formed separate and peculiar sections (αἰρεσεις). The resemblance of the doctrines and regulations of the Messalians and Hypsistarians to those of the *Essenes* and *Therapeutæ* (as Philo, *De Vita Contempl.* sketches them) is too remarkable for us to ascribe it to accident. The *Essenes* and *Therapeutæ* worshipped only the Most High God (τὸ ὄν—see Philo, *Quis Rer. Div. Hæres.*, t. ii. p. 457, and *De Vit. Cont.* p. 472. ed. Mang.); they rejected images and sacrifices (or, as it is expressed by Gregory of the Hypsistarians, εἰδῶλα καὶ θυσίας ἀποπεμπόμενοι); they



kept holy only the seventh day of the week (or, as is said of the Hypsistarians, τὸ σάββατον αἰδούμενοι); they were precise as to the eating of meats (so Gregory, τὴν περὶ τὰ βρώματα μικρολογίαν, κ.τ.λ.); they attached great value to prayer (the same is said of the Messalians by Epiphanius, Augustine, and Theodoret); they had distinct temples for prayer, and religious houses (Epiphanius mentions this of the Euchetæ as something remarkable, *Hæres.* 80); they asserted that by inspiration they saw God (so the Euchetæ were called *enthusiasts*—see Danaeus *ad Augustin. de Hæres.* pp. 168, 169); they occupied themselves much in hymns and songs of praise (for a similar reason also the Messalians probably are called Psallians in Augustine); they held nocturnal meetings (as Epiphanius states also of the Euchetæ); and that they rejected circumcision is the more probable, as they interpreted all the laws of Moses allegorically. (Philo. lib. i.) The virtues of the elder Gregory, when he was still a Hypsistarian, imply also good moral principles in the sect, which, indeed, is well known to have been the case (see Gregor. Naz. *Orat.* xix. p. 289, et seq.). The reviewer certainly is not far from wishing to consider the Hypsistarians as Therapeutæ; he thinks, indeed, that he may fairly venture to assert that they may have been descendants of that ancient sect, whose seat was in Egypt, Syria, and even in Asia Minor.'

The author, without wishing exactly to discard this ingenious conjecture, contents himself with remarking, that still the connexion of the Hypsistarians with older Essene or Therapeutic religious communities does not appear to be based on sufficient historical evidence, for him to agree unconditionally with the reviewer.

We may notice, in conclusion, an historical parallel,

not with the view of more accurately explaining the origin and character of the Hypsistarian sect, but to point out the real resemblance between two religious parties, far separated from each other by time and space. The Hypsistarians, then, may be compared with a sect of the middle ages, the *Pasagians* or *Pasaginians* (Pasagii or Pasagini), who appeared in Lombardy in the twelfth century, and took their name probably from the circumstance, that they (like many other sectarians of that century) were obliged, as birds of *passage*, to lead a rambling, wandering life, through fear of the persecutions of the dominant Church. The Pasagians were a Judaizing sect ; they required the observance of the whole law of Moses, excepting the sacrifices ; they kept the Sabbath, observed the Jewish law of meats, and introduced again the rite of circumcision, from whence they also bore the name of Circumcisi. Besides all this, they denied the divine nature of Christ, declaring Him certainly to be the highest of created beings, but still only a created being ; and they rejected generally the whole doctrine of the Trinity.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> We have two ancient accounts of the Pasagians, which, on the whole, perfectly agree ; the one, by a quondam teacher of the *Cathari*,\* *Bonacorsi*, in his *Vita Hæreticorum*, given in D'Achery's *Spicileg.*, tom. i. p. 211 et seq., runs thus :—In primis dicunt, quod mosaica lex ad litteram observanda, et quod Sabbatum et circumcisio, et aliæ legales observantiæ adhuc habere statum debeant. Dicunt enim, quod Christus, Dei filius, non sit æqualis Patri, et quod Pater et Filius et Spiritus Sanctus, istæ tres personæ non sint unus Deus et una substantia. Præterea ad augmentum sui erroris, omnes ecclesiæ doctores, et universaliter totam ecclesiam Romanum judicant et condemnant. This last was, without doubt, their chief crime, for the sake of which they were doomed by the Church of Rome to be persecuted as wander-

---

\* Another name (quasi *Puritans*) of the Passagers and Albigenes of the twelfth century.—(*Translator*.)

The Pasagians, therefore, agreed with the Hypsistarians in a pure monotheism, or unitarianism, and also in Judaizing, although the Hypsistarians did not carry this last so far as to adopt circumcision, and observe the *whole* law of Moses. A difference, certainly not quite insignificant, and one which is increased by the fact, that the Hypsistarians appear to have been subject to no positive religion, the Pasagian, on the contrary, professed to be Christians, and appealed to the Old and New Testaments for the confirmation of their doctrines.<sup>1</sup> I am, therefore, by no means inclined to assert an actual historical connexion between two sects which were separated by an interval of eight centuries; I would wish only to point out emphatically, how corresponding religious phenomena develop themselves in periods and countries so far apart, under like, though in many respects differing, circumstances.

---

ing *passaggieri* from country to country. The other notice, by *Gerhard of Bergamo* (about A.D. 1230) occurs in a short extract given by Muratori—*Antiqq. Ital. Med. Ævi.*, tom. v. p. 152, edit. Mediol. The Pasagians are there thus spoken of:—*Dicunt Christum esse primam et puram creaturam: et Vetus Testamentum esse observandum in solemnibus et circumcissione, et in ciborum perceptione, et in aliis fere omnibus, exceptis in sacrificiis.* Compare also, on this sect, Schröckh's *Church History*, xxix. p. 655; and Mosheim's *Ch. Hist.* (ii. p. 628 of the German work), where also, in addition to Füesslin's *Kirchen-und Ketzer—Historie*, i. p. 46, there is introduced a treatise from the *Bibliotheca Bremens.* (nova class. v. fasc. 2) concerning the Pasagians, which I regret not to have been able to consult.

<sup>1</sup> Bonacorsi, at the conclusion of his account, says: *Sed quia hunc suum errorem Novi Testamenti ac prophetarum testimonio nituntur, proprio illorum gladio, Christi suffragante gratia, sicut David Goliath, eundem suffocemus!*

*TRANSLATED BY G. V. COX, M.A.*

ESQUIRE-BEDEL IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD.

---

DAHLMANN'S LIFE OF HERODOTUS

DRAWN OUT FROM HIS BOOK.

WITH NOTES. 5s.

NEANDER'S JULIAN THE APOSTATE

AND

HIS GENERATION.

AN HISTORICAL PICTURE.

3s. 6d.

---

LONDON: JOHN W. PARKER, WEST STRAND.



# NEW BOOKS AND NEW EDITIONS,

PUBLISHED BY

JOHN W. PARKER, WEST STRAND.

---

**The Holy City; Historical, Topographical, and Antiquarian Notices of Jerusalem.** By G. WILLIAMS, B.D., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. With numerous Illustrations and Additions, including Prof. Willis's History of the Holy Sepulchre, and a Plan of Jerusalem, from the Ordnance Survey. Second Edition. 2 large volumes, 8vo. 2*l.* 5*s.*

---

**Professor Willis's History of the Holy Sepulchre.** With original Illustrations. 9*s.*

---

**A Plan of Jerusalem.** Copied, by permission, from the Drawing of the Survey made by the Royal Engineers in Syria; with an Historical and Descriptive Memoir, 9*s.*; or mounted on canvas, with rollers, 18*s.*

---

**Archdeacon Hare's Mission of the Comforter,** with Notes. Second Edition, in one volume, 8vo. 12*s.*

---

**The Church a Family.** Sermons on the Occasional Services of the Prayer-book. By F. DENISON MAURICE, M.A., Professor of Divinity, King's College. 4*s.* 6*d.*

---

**The Prayer-book especially considered as a Protection against Romanism.** By the same Author. 5*s.* 6*d.*

---

**Archdeacon Hone's Lives of Eminent Christians.** A New Edition, carefully revised throughout. Four volumes, with Portraits, 4*s.* 6*d.* each.

---

**Burnet's History of the Reformation, abridged.** Edited by G. E. CORRIE, B.D., Master of Jesus College, and Norrisian Professor of Divinity, Cambridge. 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Dr. Whewell's Elements of Morality. Second  
and Cheaper Edition, two volumes. 15s.

---

An Exposition of the xxxix. Articles, Historical  
and Theological. By EDWARD HAROLD BROWNE, M.A.,  
Prebendary of Exeter; late Vice-Principal of Lampeter. To  
be completed in two volumes, octavo. Vol. I. 10s. 6d.

---

The Homilies, with various Readings, and the  
Quotations from the Fathers, given at length in the Original  
Languages. Edited for the Syndics of the Cambridge Univer-  
sity Press, by G. E. CORRIE, B.D., Master of Jesus College and  
Norrisian Professor of Divinity, and Examining Chaplain to the  
Lord Bishop of Ely. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

---

Pearson on the Creed. Revised and Corrected  
for the Syndics of the Cambridge University Press, by T.  
CHEVALLIER, B.D., Professor of Mathematics, Durham. One  
thick vol., 8vo. 12s.

---

Sermons Preached before the University of Ox-  
ford. By C. A. OGILVIE, D.D., Canon of Christ Church, and  
Regius Professor of Practical Theology. 8vo. 5s.

---

Twenty-five Village Sermons. By CHARLES  
KINGSLEY, Rector of Eversley. Demy 12mo. 5s.

---

Rev. J. E. Riddle's Manual of Christian Anti-  
quities. Second Edition. 8vo. 18s.

---

New Hebrew Lexicon. Hebrew and English,  
arranged according to the *permanent* letters in each word.  
With a Hebrew Grammar, Vocabulary, and Analysis of the Book  
of Genesis. Also, a Chaldee Grammar, Lexicon, and Gramma-  
tical Analysis of the Chaldee Words of the Old Testament. By  
T. JARRETT, M.A., Professor of Arabic, Cambridge. 8vo. 21s.

---

The Psalms in Hebrew. With a Critical, Exe-  
getical, and Philological Commentary. By G. PHILLIPS, B.D.,  
Tutor of Queen's College, Cambridge. Two volumes, 8vo. 32s.

---



198

## Date Due

MAY 25 1990

~~APR 17 1966~~

MAY 5 '60

APR 3 '61

~~APR 25 '60~~

JUN 30 2007  
JUL 30 2007

~~SECURITY~~

~~SECRET~~ 30 JUL 2002

SHEET NO. 10

OCT 22 2008

APR 28 1955

DEC 6 1987

1992

~~XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX~~

DEC 31 1961



PRINTED IN U. S. A.

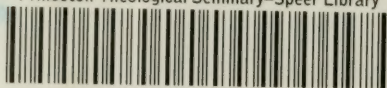




BW471 .U422

Gregory of Nazianzum ... 'the Divine'

Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00066 4104